ON THE WELL-POSEDNESS OF A HELE–SHAW-LIKE SYSTEM RESULTING FROM AN INVERSE GEOMETRY PROBLEM FORMULATED THROUGH A SHAPE OPTIMIZATION SETTING

Julius Fergy Tiongson Rabago* and Masato Kimura

Abstract. The purpose of this study is twofold. First, we revisit a shape optimization reformulation of a prototypical shape inverse problem and briefly propose a simple yet efficient numerical approach for solving the corresponding minimization problem. Second, we examine the existence, uniqueness, and continuous dependence of a classical solution to a Hele–Shaw-like system, which is derived from the continuous setting of a numerical discretization of the shape optimization reformulation for the shape inverse problem. The analysis is based on the methods developed by G. I. Bizhanova and V. A. Solonnikov in "On Free Boundary Problems for Second Order Parabolic Equations" (Algebra Anal. 12 (6) (2000) 98–139), and by V. A. Solonnikov in "Lectures on Evolution Free Boundary Problems: Classical Solutions" (Lect. Notes Math., Springer, 2003, pp. 123–175).

Mathematics Subject Classification. 35R30, 35R35, 35K55, 35S30, 76D27.

Received September 13, 2024. Accepted June 8, 2025.

1. Introduction

1.1. A Hele-Shaw-like system

In this study, we examine a Hele–Shaw-like system that arises from a shape optimization reformulation of an inverse geometry problem. We prove the existence, uniqueness, and continuous dependence of a classical solution to the quasi-stationary moving boundary problem derived from the discretized version of the optimization algorithm used to solve the shape optimization problem. The inverse problem occurs in contexts such as non-destructive testing to identify inclusions or voids in solids. The available information or data are collected from a part of the solid's surface (geometrical boundary), with the goal of determining the inclusion within the interior of the solid.

Let T be a positive number and $t \in [0, T]$. Let $\Omega(t) \subset \mathbb{R}^d$, where $d \in 2, 3$, be a bounded annular domain with a sufficiently smooth boundary $\partial\Omega(t) = \Gamma(t) \cup \Sigma$, consisting of two non-intersecting parts: a fixed boundary Σ and a free boundary $\Gamma(t)$. We assume that Σ lies outside the surface $\Gamma(t)$, and denote by $\nu(t)$ the unit normal vector to $\Gamma(t)$ directed inward the domain $\Omega(t)$; that is, it goes in the same direction with the outward unit normal vector to Σ . The main problem we consider here is the following: given a pair of positive-valued functions

Keywords and phrases: Hele-Shaw problem, quasi-stationary Stefan-type problem, shape inverse problem, shape optimization, local-in-time existence.

Faculty of Mathematics and Physics, Institute of Science and Engineering, Kanazawa University, Kakumamachi, Kanazawa 920-1192, Ishikawa, Japan.

^{*} Corresponding author: jfrabago@gmail.com

f = f(x,t) and g = g(x,t) defined on Σ , for t > 0, and an initial geometry Γ_{\circ} of the moving boundary, we seek to find a surface $\Gamma(t)$ and two functions $u_{\rm D} = u_{\rm D}(x,t)$ and $u_{\rm N} = u_{\rm N}(x,t)$ satisfying the following system of partial differential equations (PDEs):

where $\partial/\partial\nu = \partial/\partial\nu(t)$ is the inward normal derivative operator on $\Gamma(t)$ while $V_n(x,t)$ represents the velocity of movement of $\Gamma(t)$ in the direction of the normal $\nu(t)$ for all t>0. As alluded above, the problem originates from a reformulation of a shape inverse problem into a shape optimization setting. Shape optimization is a well-established technique extensively applied in engineering sciences for addressing shape identification problems. The modern mathematical theory of shape optimization was laid in monographs [1–3].

Motivation and review of related work. As far as we are concerned, shape inverse problems are typically solved numerically from an optimization perspective through shape optimization settings; see, for example, [4, 5] and the references therein. The model problem from which the Hele-Shaw-like system (1.1) was derived is a specific case of the more general conductivity reconstruction problem. This type of problem is known to be severely ill-posed in the sense of Hadamard [4]. Nevertheless, it has been widely studied in literature, both theoretically and numerically; see, e.g., [4, 6-13] and references therein. For instance, the existence and uniqueness of the solution to the problem based on boundary measurement data have been studied by several authors.; see, e.g., [8–10, 13]. Aside from these aforementioned investigations, shape optimization reformulations of shape inverse problems, in general, are hardly examined from a different theoretical and numerical point of view. The main purpose of this investigation, therefore, is to carry out a rigorous analysis of the existence, uniqueness, and continuous dependence on the data of the classical solution of (1.1) in short-time horizon. We assert that, to our knowledge, little to no work has been done on the well-posedness of the shape optimization problem from which (1.1) is derived, especially in the direction of our current study. We believe that the system (1.1) itself, originating from a shape optimization context, which in turn was derived from a shape inverse problem, is novel. Therefore, the analysis conducted in this work, inspired by the work of Bizhanova and Solonnikov [14] and Solonnikov [15], offers a new perspective. We emphasize, however, that Escher and Simonett demonstrated the existence and uniqueness of classical solutions for the multidimensional expanding Hele-Shaw problem in [16]. In their study, the problem is formulated over the exterior boundary component, while the interior component remains fixed. It is also worth mentioning that geometric flows related to shape optimization problems similar to Bernoulli-type free boundary problems are explored by Cardaliaguet and Ley in [17]. The evolution process examined in their work involves a combination of curvature and Hele-Shaw type nonlocal terms. They introduce the concept of generalized set solutions, drawing heavily from viscosity solutions (see, e.g., [18] or [19], Chap. 2, p. 69), which diverges from our current focus. The main result in [17] is the inclusion preservation principle for generalized solutions, which guarantees the existence, uniqueness, and stability of the flow. In addition, the study examines the asymptotic behavior, establishing that the solutions converge to a generalized Bernoulli exterior free-boundary problem. Meanwhile, from geometric analysis perspective, Plotnikov and Sokołowski [20] recently provided a comprehensive review of existing results in shape optimization emphasizing the theory of gradient flows for objective functions and their regularizations. For the sake of simplicity, their mathematical exposition is confined to two spatial dimensions, and they illustrate their findings through a model problem,

leading to an initial result concerning convergence in shape optimization. In an earlier work [21], Plotnikov and Sokołowski rigorously established the well-posedness of the Cauchy problem arising from a *penalized* gradient flow and conducted an in-depth examination of the case involving the Kohn-Vogelius cost functional.

Remark 1.1. The analysis conducted in this investigation can be applied to a class of shape optimization problems. Specifically, the same methodology presented in the subsequent sections can be utilized to prove the well-posedness of (1.1), where the normal velocity of the boundary of the evolving domain is given by $V_n(x,t) = -G(x,u(x))$ for $x \in \Gamma(t)$ and t > 0. Here, G can be the exact shape gradient of a cost functional such as (1.3) and is assumed to be positive for all $x \in \Omega(t)$, for all t > 0. Additionally, this approach is applicable to other quasi-stationary moving boundary problems that arise from the discretization of numerical shape optimization schemes used to solve the shape optimal control reformulation of the inverse geometry problem, such as L^2 tracking of boundary data, under appropriate assumptions on the kernel of the shape gradient of the associated cost functional.

In the next subsection, we will explore the derivation of system (1.1) and its connection to a shape optimization problem to provide further context and motivation.

1.2. Derivation of the system

Consider a bounded (simply connected) domain D with boundary $\Sigma := \partial D$ and assume the existence of a simply connected open set ω such that $\overline{\omega} \subset D$, composed of a material with a constant conductivity that is essentially different from the constant conductivity of the material in the annular subregion $\Omega := D \setminus \overline{\omega}$. We are interested in determining the shape and location of the inclusion from the knowledge of the Cauchy data of the electrical potential u on the boundary Σ . In other words, through the concept of non-destructive testing and evaluation, we want to identify the inclusion given that the pair of boundary data $f = u|_{\Sigma}$ and $g = (\nabla u \cdot \nu)|_{\Sigma}$ is known, where ν is the outward unit normal to Σ . As alluded in the previous section, the problem under consideration is a special case of the general conductivity reconstruction problem and has been extensively studied in the literature, particularly in the context of inverse problems.

Various numerical techniques can solve the inverse problem, including applying shape optimization methods as demonstrated by Roche and Sokołowski in [5], and by Eppler and Harbrecht in [4]. The former study utilized first-order shape optimization algorithms to analyze and numerically address the proposed shape optimization formulation. On the other hand, [4] investigated second-order methods related to the previous study, developed and applied by the same authors in their prior work. Here, we introduce an alternative numerical approach closely aligned with the shape optimization techniques employed in these references. Notably, our method does not directly require knowledge of the exact shape gradient typically used in shape optimization procedures. Nonetheless, our approach can be seen as stemming from the specific shape optimization formulation in [4, 5]. In essence, our method simplifies the gradient-based optimization procedure outlined in [5]. In fact, we will choose a suitable descent direction that improves descent speed for the relevant shape optimization problem. It is important to highlight in advance that our method operates as a Lagrangian-type numerical scheme, utilizing finite element methods. This is in contrast to the approaches used in [4, 5] which rely on the concepts of boundary integral equations.

To further explain the idea about our method, we first review the shape optimization formulation proposed in [5] and [4] for the model problem introduced previously; see Figure 1 for a conceptual model. To determine the inclusion ω bounded by Γ , we apply the concept of nondestructive testing and evaluation, a well-known technique used in engineering and related sciences to evaluate the properties of a material without causing damage. That is, we identify ω by measuring, for a given current distribution $g \in H^{-1/2}(\Sigma)$, the voltage distribution $f \in H^{1/2}(\Sigma)$ at the boundary Σ . This means that we are seeking to find a connected domain $\Omega := D \setminus \overline{\omega}$ and an associated harmonic function u which satisfies the overdetermined boundary value problem:

$$-\Delta u = 0 \text{ in } \Omega, \quad u = 0 \text{ on } \Gamma, \quad u = f \quad \text{and} \quad \nabla u \cdot \nu = g \text{ on } \Sigma.$$
 (1.2)

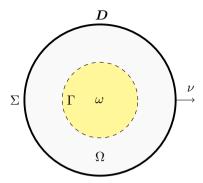


FIGURE 1. Conceptual model

Equation (1.2) admits a solution only when the true inclusion (cavity or void) ω is considered.

We recall in the following theorem a key result about identifiability for this inverse problem. It guarantees the uniqueness of the inclusion ω and consequently, the potential u from a pair of boundary data $(f, g) \neq (0, 0)$.

Theorem 1.2 ([10]). The Cauchy pair $(f,g) \neq (0,0)$ uniquely determine Γ and u satisfying (1.2).

In the context of thermal imaging, the Dirichlet data f represent a prescribed surface heat, and correspondingly, g stands for the surface heat flux of the material. This perspective reinterprets the state variable u as the internal thermal distribution within the material. It is important to note that the homogeneous Dirichlet boundary condition applied to the unknown shape Γ models a perfectly conducting inclusion. Note that when the Dirichlet data on the surface Σ is positive, the solution u to (1.2) is also positive due to the maximum principle and unique continuation property [22]. This implies that the outgoing flux $\nabla u \cdot \nu$ on Σ is positive, while on Γ , the outgoing flux is negative. Moreover, because u takes homogeneous Dirichlet data on the surface Γ of the unknown inclusion, we have the identity $|\nabla u| \equiv -\nabla u \cdot \nu$ on Γ . For a non-conducting inclusion, a Neumann boundary condition governs the problem. Additionally, if the conductivity of the inclusion differs from that of the surrounding material or object Ω , an inverse transmission problem arises.

Roche and Sokołowski in [5] proposed a shape optimization reformulation of (1.2) as follows:

$$J(\Omega) = \int_{\Omega} |\nabla (u_{\rm D} - u_{\rm N})|^2 dx = \int_{\Sigma} \left(g - \frac{\partial u_{\rm D}}{\partial \nu} \right) (u_{\rm N} - f) ds \to \inf, \tag{1.3}$$

subject to the underlying well-posed state problems

$$\begin{cases}
-\Delta u_{\rm D} = 0 & \text{in } \Omega, & u_{\rm D} = f & \text{on } \Sigma, & u_{\rm D} = 0 & \text{on } \Gamma, \\
-\Delta u_{\rm N} = 0 & \text{in } \Omega, & \nabla u_{\rm N} \cdot \nu = g & \text{on } \Sigma, & u_{\rm N} = 0 & \text{on } \Gamma.
\end{cases}$$
(1.4)

In (1.3), the infimum has to be taken over all domains containing an inclusion with sufficiently regular boundary. The existence of optimal solutions with respect to the shape optimization problem (1.3) was established in [5].

Remark 1.3. 1. The proof of the existence of an optimal solution to (1.3) over some set of admissible domains is based on properties of harmonic functions in \mathbb{R}^2 and uses the same arguments as those given by Šverák [23] for a slightly different shape optimization problem. In particular, the method cannot be directly applied in \mathbb{R}^d for $d \ge 3$.

¹While the terms inclusion, cavity, and void are related and commonly used in various contexts, such as materials science, geology, and engineering, we have used them interchangeably in this discussion.

- 2. To establish an existence result in dimension d=3, we need to assume that the family of admissible domains, say $U_{\rm ad}$, meets the following compactness criterion (see, e.g., [2], Chap. 2). Given any sequence $\{\Omega_n\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}\subset U_{\rm ad}$, there exists a subsequence $\{\Omega_{n_k}\}_{k\in\mathbb{N}}=\{D\setminus\overline{\omega}_{n_k}\}_{k\in\mathbb{N}}$, such that the sequence of compacts $\{\omega_{n_k}\}_{k\in\mathbb{N}}$ converges in the Hausdorff metric to the compact ω . Moreover, the associated sequence of metric projections $P_n:H^1_0(D)\to H^1_0(D)\to H^1_0(D)\to H^1_0(D)\to H^1_0(D)$. For such a family of admissible domains, there is a solution to the shape identification problem in \mathbb{R}^3 . The hypothesis generally requires some form of uniform regularity for the boundaries Γ , such as the cone condition or more intricate conditions related to capacity (refer to [1, 2]). For further details, see Henrot, Horn, and Sokołowski [24] for an overview of stability results for the Dirichlet problem, and Bucur and Zolésio [25] for an approach to existence problems. Additionally, [2] provides more discussion on the existence of optimal shapes in shape optimization problems. For a recent related result on the existence issue related to Problem (1.3), see [26].
- 3. For technical purposes, in order to establish the existence optimal solution, we require that any admissible inclusion or obstacle $\omega \in D$ satisfies the condition that there exists a constant $d_0 > 0$ such that $d(x, \partial D) > d_0$, for all $x \in \omega$. This condition is assumed without further notice throughout the paper. We emphasize that such a requirement is also needed for computing the shape derivatives of the states u and the cost function J with respect to ω (see, e.g., [26]).

The equivalence between (1.2) and (1.3) issues from the first-order necessary condition of a minimizer of the shape functional $J(\Omega)$; that is²,

$$dJ(\Omega)[\mathbf{V}] = \lim_{\varepsilon \searrow 0} \frac{J(\Omega_{\varepsilon}) - J(\Omega)}{\varepsilon} = \left. \frac{d}{d\varepsilon} J(\Omega_{\varepsilon}) \right|_{s=0} = \int_{\Gamma} G\nu \cdot \mathbf{V} \, ds,$$

where

$$G = \left(\frac{\partial u_{\rm D}}{\partial \nu}\right)^2 - \left(\frac{\partial u_{\rm N}}{\partial \nu}\right)^2 = \left(\frac{\partial u_{\rm D}}{\partial \nu} + \frac{\partial u_{\rm N}}{\partial \nu}\right) \left(\frac{\partial u_{\rm D}}{\partial \nu} - \frac{\partial u_{\rm N}}{\partial \nu}\right) =: G^+ G^-,$$

has to hold for all sufficiently smooth perturbation fields \mathbf{V} . Here, Ω_{ε} stands for a perturbation of Ω along \mathbf{V} that vanishes on the known surface Σ . Obviously, by the calculus of variations, the above statement implies the necessary condition $\nabla u_{\mathbf{N}} \cdot \nu \equiv \nabla u_{\mathbf{D}} \cdot \nu$ on Γ . For details on how to compute $dJ(\Omega)[\mathbf{V}]$, and for more discussion on shape optimization methods in general, we refer readers to [1] and [3].

To resolve the minimization problem (1.3), a typical approach is to utilize the kernel of the shape derivative $dJ(\Omega)[\mathbf{V}]$, the so-called shape gradient (see, e.g., [1], Thm. 3.6, p. 479–480), in a gradient-based descent algorithm. For example, for a smooth boundary $\partial\Omega$ and sufficiently regular states $u_{\rm D}$ and $u_{\rm N}$, one can take $\mathbf{0} \neq \mathbf{V} = -G\nu \in L^2(\Gamma)^d$. This implies that, by formal expansion, and t > 0 sufficiently small, the following inequality holds

$$J(\Omega_t) = J(\Omega) + t \left. \frac{d}{d\varepsilon} J(\Omega_\varepsilon) \right|_{\varepsilon=0} + O(t^2) = J(\Omega) + t \int_{\Gamma} G\nu \cdot \mathbf{V} \, ds + O(t^2)$$
$$= J(\Omega) - t \int_{\Gamma} |\mathbf{V}|^2 \, ds + O(t^2) < J(\Omega).$$

Hence, in practice, opting for the descent direction $\mathbf{V} = -G\nu$ is straightforward. However, there are cases where one can deviate from this choice. For instance, if f > 0, we can choose $\mathbf{V} = -G^{-}\nu$, which still provides a descent direction for J. Indeed, in such a case, $G^{+} > 0$ on Γ . Hence, it is evident that when $\mathbf{V} = -G^{-}\nu$, the following

There, the representation of the shape gradient is non-conventional. We must note that ν denotes the inward unit normal to Γ and $\partial/\partial\nu$ is the inward normal derivative on Γ.

holds:

$$J(\Omega_t) = J(\Omega) + t \int_{\Gamma} G^+ G^- \nu \cdot \mathbf{V} \, ds + O(t^2) = J(\Omega) - t \int_{\Gamma} \underbrace{G^+}_{>0} |\mathbf{V}|^2 \, ds + O(t^2) < J(\Omega). \tag{1.5}$$

A naive idea to numerically solve (1.2) then involves an iterative procedure that minimizes the cost functional J. For simplicity, let $\Delta t > 0$ be a fixed number. Given an initial shape Γ_0 , for all $k = 1, 2, \ldots$, denote the free boundary at iteration k as Γ_k . Then, the update at iteration k+1 is given by $\Gamma_{k+1} = \{x + \Delta t \mathbf{V}_k(x) \mid x \in \Gamma_k\},\$ for $k = 0, 1, \ldots$ Accordingly, the main steps for computing the kth free boundary Γ_k using J via a naive gradient-based descent method is given in Algorithm 1.4.

Algorithm 1.4. Boundary variation algorithm:

- Initialization Fix a number $\Delta t > 0$ and choose an initial shape Γ_{\circ} .
- Iteration For $k = 0, 1, \dots$
 - 1. Solve the corresponding variational formulations of (1.4) on Ω_k .
 - 2. Define $V_{n,k} := \nabla u_{\mathrm{D},k} \cdot \nu_k \nabla u_{\mathrm{N},k} \cdot \nu_k$ on Γ^k . 3. Set $\Gamma_{k+1} = \{x + \Delta t \mathbf{V}_k(x) \mid x \in \Gamma_k\}$.
- Stop Test Repeat Iteration until convergence.

The identification of the unknown boundary Γ in (1.2) according to Algorithm 1.4 describes a similar evolutionary equation for the Hele-Shaw-like system (1.1) (see, e.g., [27-29] for the classical Hele-Shaw flow problem) in discrete setting. Indeed, let T > 0 be a given final time of interest (this can be interpreted as the condition for Stop Test in Algorithm 1.4), N_T be a fixed positive integer, and set the time discretization step-size as $\Delta t := T/N_T$. For each time-step index $k = 0, 1, \dots, N_T$, we let $t_k = k\Delta t$ and denote the time-discretized domain and free boundary by $\Omega_k \approx \Omega(k\Delta t)$ and $\Gamma_k \approx \Gamma(k\Delta t)$, respectively, and the associated time-discretized functions as $u_{D,k} \approx u_D(\cdot, k\Delta t)$ and $u_{N,k} \approx u_N(\cdot, k\Delta t)$. Then, given an initial free boundary Γ_{\circ} , Algorithm 1.4 reduces to solving the moving boundary value problem

$$\begin{cases}
-\Delta u_{\mathrm{D},k} = 0 & \text{in } \Omega_{k}, \\
u_{\mathrm{D},k} = f & \text{on } \Sigma, \\
u_{\mathrm{D},k} = 0 & \text{on } \Gamma_{k}, \\
-\Delta u_{\mathrm{N},k} = 0 & \text{in } \Omega_{k}, \\
\nabla u_{\mathrm{N},k} \cdot \nu_{k} = g & \text{on } \Sigma, \\
u_{\mathrm{N},k} = 0 & \text{on } \Gamma_{k}, \\
V_{n,k} = -(\nabla u_{\mathrm{D},k} \cdot \nu_{k} - \nabla u_{\mathrm{N},k} \cdot \nu_{k}) & \text{on } \Gamma_{k}, \\
\Gamma(0) = \Gamma_{\circ}.
\end{cases} \tag{1.6}$$

Notice that the discrete system (1.6) is clearly the time-discretized version of system (1.1) with f = f(x) and $g = g(x), x \in \Sigma.$

1.3. Extended-regularized normal flows for shape identifications

In various studies, it has been observed that directly using $V = -G\nu$ can lead to unwanted oscillations on the boundary, which may cause numerical instabilities, especially in finite element methods. To address this issue, one typically employs a Sobolev gradient method in numerical optimization (see [30], Chap. 11), combined with perimeter or surface area penalization. A typical approach includes the traction method [31] or the H^1 gradient method [32], both widely used smoothing techniques in shape optimization problems [33]. On the other hand, it is worth noting that treating inverse geometry problems as shape optimization problems presents significant challenges due to their inherent ill-posed nature [4]. These problems are prone to instability and are frequently

stabilized through numerical regularization techniques [34]. For example, in a related work [35], the authors stabilized their shape optimization algorithm, similar to (1.2), by employing perimeter regularization.

Following the discussed idea, Algorithm 1.4 can be modified to formulate a more stable numerical shape optimization algorithm to solve (1.2). Given an initial shape Ω_0 and denoting the domain shape at iteration k as Ω_k , the update at iteration k+1 is $\Omega_{k+1} = \{x + \Delta t \mathbf{V}_k(x) \mid x \in \Omega_k\}$, where $\Delta t > 0$ is a sufficiently small step size and V_k is the descent deformation field at iteration k. The main steps for computing Ω_k through formulation (1.3) via a gradient-based descent method in Hilbert space can then be summarized in the following optimization algorithm.

Algorithm 1.5. Domain variation algorithm:

- Initialization Fix a number $\Delta t > 0$ and choose an initial shape Ω_0 .
- Iteration For $k = 0, 1, \dots$
 - 1. Solve the corresponding variational formulations of (1.4) on Ω_k .
 - 2. Compute $\mathbf{V}_k \in V(\Omega_k)^d$ by solving the variational equation

$$a(\mathbf{V}_k, \boldsymbol{\varphi}) = \int_{\Gamma_k} \tilde{G}_k \nu_k \cdot \boldsymbol{\varphi} \, ds, \quad \forall \boldsymbol{\varphi} \in V(\Omega_k)^d,$$

where $V(\Omega_k) := \{ \varphi \in H^1(\Omega_k) \mid \varphi = 0 \text{ on } \Sigma \}$ and a is a bounded and coercive bilinear form on $V(\Omega_k)^d$.

- 3. Set $\Omega_{k+1} = \{x + \Delta t \mathbf{V}_k(x) \mid x \in \Omega_k\}$. Stop Test Repeat Iteration until convergence.

In Step 2 of Iteration, we can take \tilde{G} as either exactly G or G^- , depending on the sign of f and g. Meanwhile, for the Stop Test, we simply terminate the algorithm after a finite number of iterations.

As emphasized in previous subsections, our main intent in this exposition is to prove the existence and uniqueness of classical solution to (1.1). Before delving with this problem, however, we first exhibit a numerical example in two spatial dimensions illustrating the feasibility of the proposed optimization algorithm with the choice of preconditioned descent vector field V obtained through the vector $G^{-\nu}$. Here, we define $a(\varphi, \psi) :=$ $(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \psi)_{\Omega}$, for $\varphi, \psi \in V(\Omega)$. Hereon, we shall refer to our algorithm as quasi-stationary Stefan type-scheme or QSSTS as it also provides a kind of a comoving mesh method [36, 37] for (1.1).

Example 1.6. Using Algorithm 1.5³, we reconstruct various cavity shapes (see Fig. 2) under the following setup. The specimen under investigation is a circular disk with a unit radius, centered at the origin. For the input data, we set $f \equiv 1$ on Σ , while synthetic data is used for extra boundary measurements on the outer part of Σ. To avoid "inverse crimes" (see [38], p. 179), the synthetic data is generated using a different numerical scheme, employing a larger number of discretization points and P2 finite element basis functions in the FreeFem++ code [39]. In the inversion procedure, all variational problems are solved using P1 finite elements with coarse meshes.

We contrast the traditional shape optimization approach (utilizing $\tilde{G} = G$) with the proposed method (employing $\tilde{G} = G^-$). The geometry of the initial free boundary Γ_{\circ} is a circle centered at the origin with a radius of 0.9. The experimental findings, outlined in Figure 2, indicate a clear advantage of the proposed method (QSSTS) over the conventional shape optimization method (SO). The QSSTS method not only achieves faster identification of the shape and location of the unknown inclusion, but also does so with greater accuracy in general. From these numerical results, one can expect that the proposed method will exhibit the same advantages over traditional shape optimization approaches, even when extended to more complex geometries and higher dimensions.

 $[\]overline{^3}$ Here, we used a non-uniform time step size to clearly highlight the potential of taking $\tilde{G}=G^-$. In fact, we determine the step size using a backtracking line search procedure, calculated as $\Delta t_k = cJ(\Omega_k)/|\mathbf{V}_k|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_k)}^2$ at each time step, where c > 0 is a scaling factor. This factor is adjusted to prevent reversed triangles within the mesh after updating (see [40], p. 281).

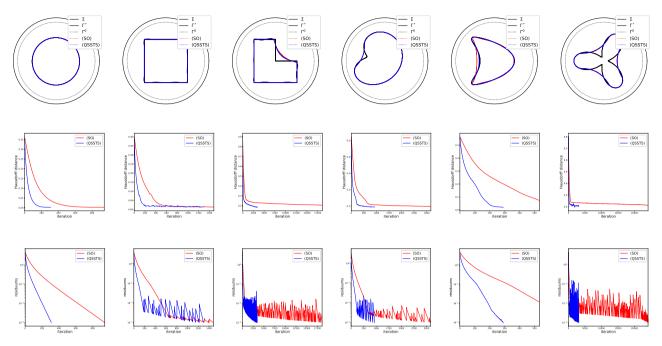


FIGURE 2. Identification results for various cavity shapes (top row), histories of Hausdorff distances (middle row), and residuums (bottom row). In the history plots, the red lines represent the conventional shape optimization approach (SO), while the blue lines indicate the values obtained using the QSSTS approach.

Example 1.7. We also evaluate the performance of the proposed QSSTS approach compared to the classical SO method in three dimensions. The results, shown in Figure 3, illustrate the identification of cubic and dumbbell-shaped cavities inside a unit ball using these methods, where in all cases we choose a ball of radius 0.8 as the initial guess for the reconstruction procedure. The main observation is that both methods produce almost identical reconstructions of the exact cavities. However, a clear difference is seen in their convergence speeds: the QSSTS method converges significantly faster than the SO method, as expected and consistent with the results observed in the two-dimensional case. It should be noted, however, that the reconstruction in the concave regions of the cavities is less accurate, likely because these regions are farther from the measurement surface. In relation to this, a recent numerical study has proposed improving the identification of such concavities by coupling the standard SO method with the alternating direction method of multipliers (ADMM); see [44]. We expect that combining QSSTS with ADMM could lead to a more robust and accurate reconstruction scheme, which we leave as a subject for future work.

The rest of the paper is organized as follows. In Section 2, we establish several auxiliary results related to a diffeomorphic mapping between a reference domain and its perturbation. In Section 3, we present the main result of the paper (see Thm. 3.2), which addresses the local-in-time solvability of system (1.1) by employing techniques developed by Solonnikov in [15]. The remaining sections sequentially outline the key steps in proving the main result. Section 4 details the transformation of the original problem onto a fixed domain. In Section 5, we establish the regularity of solutions on the fixed domain. Section 6 addresses the nonlinear problem with respect to a parameter. This is followed by an analysis of the linearized problem in Section 7. The proof of the main result, as stated in Theorem 3.2, is completed in Section 8. Finally, a summary of the work and some final remarks are given in Section 9.

This work also includes several appendices that provide preliminary analyses of the well-posedness of (1.1) in the case of axisymmetric domains (see Appendices A and B), demonstrations of transformations and

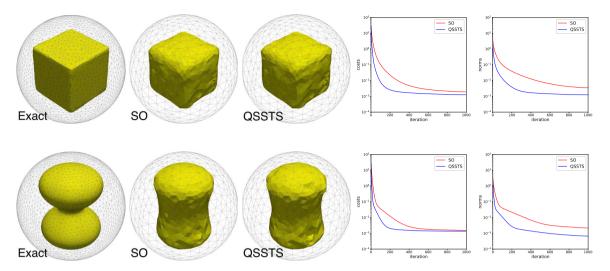


FIGURE 3. Identifications of cube and a dumbbell shape cavity and histories of cost values and gradient norms.

computations of key equations and identities (Appendices C and D) utilized in the paper, and detailed proofs of auxiliary lemmas used in the proof of the main result (Appendix E).

2. Auxiliary results

To state clearly our main result, we start by fixing some notations and prove some preliminary results in this section. Throughout the paper, for $k \in \mathbb{N} \cup \{0\}$, $C^k(\overline{\Omega})$ denotes the usual space of all functions having continuous and bounded derivatives in $\overline{\Omega}$ up to kth order while, with $\alpha \in (0,1)$, $C^{k+\alpha}(\Omega)$ is the Banach space of all functions $u \in C^k(\Omega)$ for which the norm⁴

$$|u|_{\Omega}^{(k+\alpha)} = |u|_{\Omega}^{(k)} + [u]_{\Omega}^{(k+\alpha)},$$

is finite, where

$$|u|_{\Omega}^{(k)} = \sum_{j=0}^{k} [u]_{\Omega}^{(j)}, \qquad [u]_{\Omega}^{(j)} = \max_{|\beta|=j} \left| D^{\beta} u \right|_{\Omega}^{(0)}, \qquad |u|_{\Omega}^{(0)} = [u]_{\Omega}^{(0)} = \sup_{\Omega} |u|,$$

and

$$[u]_{\Omega}^{(k+\alpha)} = \max_{|\beta|=k} [D^{\beta}u]_{\Omega}^{(\alpha)}, \qquad [u]_{\Omega}^{(\alpha)} = \sup_{\substack{x,x' \in \Omega \\ x \neq x'}} \frac{|u(x) - u(y)|}{|x - y|^{\alpha}}.$$

Given a bounded simply connected domain $D \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ with boundary $\partial D = \Sigma$, we define the set of admissible geometries (the boundary of inclusions) as follows:

$$\mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}:=\left\{\Gamma=\partial\omega\mid\overline{\Omega}\subset D,\ \omega\text{ is a simply connected bounded domain and }\partial\omega\in C^{2+\alpha}\right\}.$$

⁴See also the norms issued at the beginning of Section 3 (cf. notations in [49, 66]).

For $\Gamma \in \mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}$, we introduce the notation $\Omega(\Gamma)$ to denote an annular domain in \mathbb{R}^d with boundary $\partial \Omega(\Gamma) = \Gamma \cup \Sigma$. Accordingly, given $f \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Sigma)$ and $\Gamma \in \mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}$, we denote by $u_D(\Gamma)$ the unique solution of

$$\begin{cases}
 u_{\rm D} \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega(\Gamma)}), \\
 -\Delta u_{\rm D} = 0 & \text{in } \Omega(\Gamma), \\
 u_{\rm D} = f & \text{on } \Sigma, \\
 u_{\rm D} = 0 & \text{on } \Gamma.
\end{cases}$$
(2.1)

Similarly, given $g \in C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma)$ and $\Gamma \in \mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}$, we denote by $u_N(\Gamma)$ the unique solution of

$$\begin{cases}
 u_{\rm N} \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega(\Gamma)}), \\
 -\Delta u_{\rm N} = 0 & \text{in } \Omega(\Gamma), \\
 \frac{\partial u_{\rm N}}{\partial \nu} = g & \text{on } \Sigma, \\
 u_{\rm N} = 0 & \text{on } \Gamma.
\end{cases}$$
(2.2)

Hereinafter, unless otherwise stated, we assume $\Gamma \in \mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}$.

For technical purposes and for economy of space, we need to introduce a notion of quasi-normal vector on Γ .

Definition 2.1. We say that a vector field **N** is *quasi-normal* on $\Gamma \in \mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}$, inheriting the regularity of Γ , if

$$\begin{cases} \mathbf{N} \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma; \mathbb{R}^d), \ \mathbf{N} = 0 \text{ near } \Sigma, \text{ and} \\ \text{it is such that } |\mathbf{N}(\xi)| = 1 \text{ and } \mathbf{N}(\xi) \cdot \nu(\xi; \Gamma) > 0, \text{ for all } \xi \in \Gamma. \end{cases}$$
 (2.3)

The assumption that **N** vanishes near Σ is necessary to keep the exterior boundary Σ fixed. We let $I_{\varepsilon_0} := [-\varepsilon_0, \varepsilon_0]$ and fix a constant $\varepsilon_0 = \varepsilon_0(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}) > 0$ such that the map

$$X: \Gamma \times I_{\varepsilon_0} \longrightarrow \Gamma^{\varepsilon_0} \subset \mathbb{R}^d, \qquad X(\xi, \rho) \longmapsto \xi + \rho \mathbf{N}(\xi) \subset D,$$

is a $C^{2+\alpha}$ -diffeomorphism, where

$$\Gamma^{\varepsilon} := \{ X(\xi, r) := \xi + r \mathbf{N}(\xi) \mid (\xi, r) \in \Gamma \times I_{\varepsilon} \},$$

for $\varepsilon > 0$. In fact, we have the following proposition.

Proposition 2.2. There exists a constant $\varepsilon_0 > 0$ such that

$$X \in \text{Diffeo}^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma \times \overline{I}_{\varepsilon_0}; \Gamma^{\varepsilon_0}), \qquad \Gamma^{\varepsilon_0} := X(\Gamma \times \overline{I}_{\varepsilon_0}).$$

Proof. Let $\varrho \in B_1 := B_1(\mathbb{R}^{d-1})$ (i.e., B_1 denotes the unit ball in \mathbb{R}^{d-1}). For all $\xi_0 \in \Gamma$, there exists an open set $B(\xi_0) \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ containing ξ_0 and a mapping $\varphi \in \text{Diffeo}^{2+\alpha}(\overline{B_1}, \overline{\Gamma \cap B(\xi_0)})$ such that

$$\Upsilon: \overline{B}_1 \times I_{\varepsilon} \to \mathbb{R}^d, \qquad \Upsilon(\varrho, r) := X(\varphi(\varrho), r) = \varphi(\varrho) + r \mathbf{N}(\varphi(\varrho)).$$

We shall first prove that the determinant of the Jacobian of the map Υ is non-zero for all $(\varrho, r) \in \overline{B}_1 \times I_{\varepsilon}$.

We let $\widetilde{\mathbf{N}}$ be a smooth extension of \mathbf{N} in a tubular neighborhood of Γ and define $\mathsf{N}(\varrho,r) = \mathsf{I} + r \nabla_{\Gamma}^{\top} \widetilde{\mathbf{N}}(\varphi(\varrho))$. By straightforward computations, we get

$$\begin{split} \mathbb{R}^{d\times d} \ni \nabla_{(\varrho,r)}^{\top} \Upsilon(\varrho,r) &= \left(\nabla_{\varrho}^{\top} \Upsilon(\varrho,r) \quad \partial_{r} \Upsilon(\varrho,r) \right) \\ &= \left(\nabla_{\varrho}^{\top} \varphi(\varrho) + r \left(\nabla_{x}^{\top} \widetilde{\mathbf{N}}(x) \big|_{x=\varphi(\varrho)} \right) \nabla_{\varrho}^{\top} \varphi(\varrho) \quad \mathbf{N}(\varphi(\varrho)) \right) \\ &= \left(\nabla_{\varrho}^{\top} \varphi(\varrho) + r \nabla_{\Gamma}^{\top} \widetilde{\mathbf{N}}(\varphi(\varrho)) \nabla_{\varrho}^{\top} \varphi(\varrho) \quad \mathbf{N}(\varphi(\varrho)) \right) \\ &= \left(\left(\mathbf{I} + r \nabla_{\Gamma}^{\top} \widetilde{\mathbf{N}}(\varphi(\varrho)) \right) \nabla_{\varrho}^{\top} \varphi(\varrho) \quad \mathbf{N}(\varphi(\varrho)) \right) \\ &= \left(\nabla_{\varrho}^{\top} \varphi(\varrho) \quad \mathbf{N}(\varphi(\varrho)) \right) \\ &= \mathbf{N}(\varrho, r) \left(\mathbf{N}^{-1}(\varrho, r) \nabla_{\varrho}^{\top} \varphi(\varrho) \quad \mathbf{N}^{-1}(\varrho, r) \mathbf{N}(\varphi(\varrho)) \right). \end{split}$$

For $\xi := \varphi(\varrho)$, we claim that

$$\left[\mathsf{N}^{-1}(\varrho,r)\mathbf{N}(\xi)\right]\cdot\nu(\xi)>0.$$

Indeed, since **N** is a quasi-normal vector on Γ , there exists a constant c > 0 such that $\mathbf{N}(\xi) \cdot \nu(\xi) \geqslant c > 0$, for all $\xi \in \Gamma$. Noting that

$$\mathsf{N}^{-1} - \mathsf{I} = \mathsf{N}^{-1}(\mathsf{I} - \mathsf{N}) = r\mathsf{N}^{-1}\nabla_{\Gamma}^{\mathsf{T}}\mathbf{N},$$

we can choose $\varepsilon_0 \leqslant \varepsilon_1$ where

$$\varepsilon_1 = c \min \left\{ 1, \frac{1}{2 \left\| \mathbf{N}^{-1} \nabla_{\Gamma}^{\top} \mathbf{N} \right\|} \right\}$$

so that

$$[\mathsf{N}^{-1}(\varrho,r)\mathbf{N}(\xi)] \cdot \nu(\xi) = [\mathsf{N}^{-1}(\mathsf{I} - \mathsf{N})(\varrho,r)\mathbf{N}(\xi)] \cdot \nu(\xi) + \mathbf{N}(\xi) \cdot \nu(\xi)$$
$$\geqslant c - \|\mathsf{N}^{-1} - \mathsf{I}\| \geqslant \frac{c}{2},$$

where $\|\cdot\|$ is the usual entry-wise matrix norm.

We next prove that the map X is injective. For this purpose, we show that

if
$$\xi, \tilde{\xi} \in \Gamma$$
 and $X(\xi, \rho) = X(\tilde{\xi}, \tilde{\rho})$, then $(\xi, \rho) = (\tilde{\xi}, \tilde{\rho})$.

Again, we note that for each $\xi \in \Gamma$, there exists an open set $B(\xi) \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ containing ξ . Meanwhile, since Γ is compact, there exists a finite collection of open covers $\{O_j\}_{j=1}^M$, $M \in \mathbb{N}$, such that $\Gamma = \bigcup_{j=1}^M O_j$. For each $j = 1, \ldots, M$, we let $\xi_j \in \Gamma$ and define, for each open set $B(\xi_j) \ni \xi_j$, the set $O_j = \Gamma \cap B(\xi_j) \ni \xi_j$. Clearly, for $\xi_i \neq \xi_j$, there exists $r_0 > 0$ such that

$$\inf_{\substack{\{\xi_i,\xi_j\}\not\subset O_j\\\xi_i,\xi_j\in\Gamma}}|\xi_i-\xi_j|=r_0>0. \tag{2.4}$$

By the previous argument, it suffices to prove that

if
$$\xi, \tilde{\xi} \in \Gamma$$
 and $X(\xi, \rho) = X(\tilde{\xi}, \tilde{\rho})$, then $\xi = \tilde{\xi}$.

Let us assume that $\xi, \tilde{\xi} \in \Gamma \times I_{\varepsilon}$, $X(\xi, \rho) = X(\tilde{\xi}, \tilde{\rho})$, and $\xi \neq \tilde{\xi}$. The latter condition implies that there exist $i, j \in \{1, ..., M\}$, with $i \neq j$, such that $\xi \in O_i \setminus O_j$ and $\tilde{\xi} \in O_j \setminus O_i$. Now, we let

$$r_0 := \inf\{\xi - \tilde{\xi} \mid \xi, \tilde{\xi} \in \Gamma \text{ and } \{\xi_i, \xi_j\} \not\subset O_j, \text{ for all } j = 1, \dots, M\}.$$

Meanwhile, we have

$$0 \neq \xi - \tilde{\xi} = \rho \mathbf{N}(\xi) - \tilde{\rho} \mathbf{N}(\tilde{\xi}) = (\rho - \tilde{\rho}) \mathbf{N}(\xi) + \tilde{\rho} (\mathbf{N}(\xi) - \mathbf{N}(\tilde{\xi})).$$

Hence,

$$\xi - \tilde{\xi} \leqslant |\rho - \tilde{\rho}| + L_0 |\tilde{\rho}| \xi - \tilde{\xi}, \quad \text{where } L_0 := \sup_{\substack{x,y \in \Gamma \\ x \neq y}} \frac{|\mathbf{N}(x) - \mathbf{N}(y)|}{|x - y|}.$$

Since $|\tilde{\rho}| \leq \varepsilon_0$, we get

$$(1 - \varepsilon_0 L_0)\xi - \tilde{\xi} \leqslant |\rho - \tilde{\rho}| \leqslant 2\varepsilon_0.$$

From (2.4), we deduce that

$$r_0 = \inf_{\substack{\{\xi_i, \xi_j\} \not\subset O_j \\ \xi_i, \xi_i \in \Gamma}} |\xi_i - \xi_j| \leqslant \xi - \tilde{\xi} \leqslant \frac{2\varepsilon_0}{1 - \varepsilon_0 L_0}.$$

Taking $\varepsilon_0 < \frac{r_0}{2 + r_0 L_0}$, we arrive at a contradiction unless $r_0 = 0$. Thus, $\xi = \tilde{\xi}$. For the sake of being specific, we choose

$$\varepsilon_0 = c \min \left\{ \frac{r_0}{3 + r_0 L_0}, \varepsilon_1 \right\}, \qquad \varepsilon_1 = c \min \left\{ 1, \frac{1}{2 \left\| \mathbf{N}^{-1} \nabla_{\Gamma}^{\top} \mathbf{N} \right\|} \right\}$$

to conclude the proof.

Remark 2.3 (Extensions of the normal vector). In the previous proof, it suffices to assume that $\widetilde{\mathbf{N}}$ is $C^{1+\alpha}$. This is guaranteed because $\Gamma \in \mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}$ implies that $\nu \in C^{1+\alpha}$, and therefore, we can create a $C^{1+\alpha}$ extension of ν in $D \supset \Gamma$. More specifically, there exists an ε_{\star} -neighborhood of Γ ($\varepsilon_{\star} \geqslant \varepsilon_{0}$), say $\mathcal{N}^{\varepsilon_{\star}}(\Gamma) \supset X(\Gamma \times I_{\varepsilon_{0}})$, such that $\widetilde{\mathbf{N}} \in C^{1+\alpha}(\mathcal{N}^{\varepsilon_{\star}}(\Gamma); \mathbb{R}^{d})$. Additionally, we see that the distance function $\mathrm{d}(\cdot,\Gamma) \in C^{2+\alpha}(\mathcal{N}^{\varepsilon_{\star}}(\Gamma))$, where $\mathrm{d}(x,\Gamma) := \pm \mathrm{dist}(x,\Gamma)$. Consequently, for any $x \in \mathcal{N}^{\varepsilon_{\star}}(\Gamma)$, we can define $\widetilde{\mathbf{N}}(x) := \mathbf{N}(\xi(x))$, where $\xi(x) = x - \mathrm{d}(x,\Gamma)\nabla\,\mathrm{d}(x,\Gamma)$. Furthermore, for later use, we emphasize that we can create another extension of \mathbf{N} which is $C^{2+\alpha}$. That is, for $(\xi,\rho) \in \Gamma \times I_{\varepsilon_{0}}$, we can define $\widetilde{\widetilde{\mathbf{N}}}(X(\Gamma \times I_{\varepsilon_{0}})) := \mathbf{N}(\xi)$ such that $\widetilde{\widetilde{\mathbf{N}}}|_{\Gamma} = \mathbf{N}$. These extensions are assumed to vanish near Σ .

For fixed real numbers a and b, where b > a, the scalar-valued function ρ belongs to the Banach space

$$R_{[a,b]}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}) := \left\{ \rho : \Gamma \times [a,b] \to I_{\varepsilon_0(\Gamma, \mathbf{N})} \mid \rho \in C^0([a,b]; C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma)) \cap C^1([a,b]; C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma)) \right\}. \tag{2.5}$$

We introduce the set

$$R_0(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}) := \left\{ \rho \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma) \mid |\rho(\xi)| \leqslant \varepsilon_0(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}), \ \forall \xi \in \Gamma \right\}.$$

For $\rho \in R_0(\Gamma, \mathbf{N})$, it can be shown that

$$S(\rho) := \{X(\xi, \rho) \mid \xi \in \Gamma\}$$
 is a $C^{2+\alpha}$ boundary.

In fact, $S(\rho) \in A^{2+\alpha}$, as claimed in the following proposition.

Proposition 2.4. There exists $\varepsilon_1 := \varepsilon_1(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}) \in (0, \varepsilon_0(\Gamma, \mathbf{N})]$ such that $S(\rho) \in \mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}$ holds for $\rho \in R_1(\Gamma, \mathbf{N})$, where

$$R_1(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}) := \{ \rho \in R_0(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}) \mid |\rho(\xi)| \leqslant \varepsilon_1, |\nabla_{\Gamma} \rho(\xi)| \leqslant \varepsilon_1, \text{ for all } \xi \in \Gamma \}.$$

To prove the proposition, we need the next lemma.

Lemma 2.5. Let $k \in \mathbb{N}$, $\alpha \in [0,1)$, and $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ be an open bounded set with $C^{k+\alpha}$ boundary. Let $\phi \in C_0^{k+\alpha}(\Omega)$ and consider $\varphi(x) = x + \phi(x)$, $x \in \Omega$. Assume that $\max_{x \in \overline{\Omega}} \|\nabla^\top \phi(x)\| < 1$. Then, $\det(\nabla^\top \varphi) > 0$ and $\varphi \in \operatorname{Diffeo}^{k+\alpha}(\Omega,\Omega)$; i.e., the map $\varphi : \Omega \to \Omega$ is a $C^{k+\alpha}$ -diffeomorphism.

See Appendix E.1 for the proof.

Proof of Proposition 2.4. Let $\varepsilon_0 := \varepsilon_0(\Gamma, \mathbf{N})$. The map $X : \Gamma \times I_{\varepsilon_0} \to \Gamma^{\varepsilon_0}$ is a $C^{2+\alpha}$ -diffeomorphism. We choose and fix $\varepsilon > \varepsilon_0$, with $|\varepsilon - \varepsilon_0|$ sufficiently small, such that the map $X : \Gamma \times I_{\varepsilon} \to \Gamma^{\varepsilon} \subset D \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ is a $C^{2+\alpha}$ -diffeomorphism. Consequently, $X^{-1} : \Gamma^{\varepsilon} \to \Gamma \times I_{\varepsilon}$ is also a $C^{2+\alpha}$ -diffeomorphism; i.e., $X^{-1} = (\hat{\xi}(x), \hat{r}(x))$ where $\hat{\xi} \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma^{\varepsilon}, \Gamma)$ and $\hat{r} \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma^{\varepsilon}, I_{\varepsilon})$. We consider $\eta \in C_0^{\infty}(\mathbb{R})$ with $0 \le \eta(s) \le 1$, such that $\eta(s) = 1$ for $|s| \le \varepsilon_0$ and supp $\eta \subset (-\varepsilon, \varepsilon)$.

Let us define Φ as follows:

$$\Phi(x) = \begin{cases} x & \text{if } x \in \overline{D} \setminus \Gamma^{\varepsilon}, \\ x + \eta(\hat{r}(x))\rho(\hat{\xi}(x))\mathbf{N}(\hat{\xi}(x)) & \text{if } x \in \Gamma^{\varepsilon}. \end{cases}$$

Clearly, $\Phi \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{D}; \mathbb{R}^d)$. We claim that $\Phi \in \text{Diffeo}^{2+\alpha}(\Omega, \Omega)$. Indeed, this follows from Lemma 2.5. We only need to verify that the norm of the Jacobian of its perturbation – given that $|\rho(\xi)| \leq \varepsilon_1$, $|\nabla_{\Gamma}\rho(\xi)| \leq \varepsilon_1$, for all $\xi \in \Gamma$ – has magnitude less than one. To facilitate the proof, let us write $\mathbf{G}(x) := \eta(\hat{r}(x))\mathbf{N}(\hat{\xi}(x))$ and define $\Phi(x) = x + \phi(x)$, where

$$\phi(x) = \begin{cases} \mathbf{0} & \text{if } x \in \overline{D} \setminus \Gamma^{\varepsilon}, \\ \mathbf{G}(x)\rho(\hat{\xi}(x)) & \text{if } x \in \Gamma^{\varepsilon}. \end{cases}$$

From the definition of ϕ , we have

$$\nabla^{\top} \phi(x) = \begin{cases} \mathbf{0} & \text{if } x \in \overline{D} \setminus \Gamma^{\varepsilon}, \\ \nabla^{\top} \mathbf{G}(x) \rho(\hat{\xi}(x)) + \mathbf{G}(x) \nabla_{\Gamma}^{\top} \rho(\hat{\xi}(x)) \nabla_{x}^{\top} \hat{\xi}(x) & \text{if } x \in \Gamma^{\varepsilon}. \end{cases}$$

Computing its norm, while noting that $|\rho(\xi)| \leq \varepsilon_1$ and $|\nabla_{\Gamma} \rho(\xi)| \leq \varepsilon_1$, for all $\xi \in \Gamma$, we get

$$\|\nabla^{\top}\phi(x)\| \leq \|\rho\|_{\infty} \|\nabla^{\top}\mathbf{G}\| + |\mathbf{G}(x)| \left|\nabla_{\Gamma}^{\top}\rho(\hat{\xi}(x))\right| \|\nabla_{x}^{\top}\hat{\xi}(x)\|$$
$$\leq \varepsilon_{1} \left[\max_{x \in \Gamma^{\varepsilon}} \|\nabla^{\top}\mathbf{G}(x)\| + \max_{x \in \Gamma^{\varepsilon}} \left(|\mathbf{G}(x)| \|\nabla_{x}^{\top}\hat{\xi}(x)\|\right) \right] < 1.$$

This proves the proposition.

For $\rho \in R_{[a,b]}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N})$, we define the moving boundary

$$\mathcal{M}(\rho, [a, b]) := \bigcup_{t \in [a, b]} \mathcal{S}(\rho(t)) \times \{t\}, \tag{2.6}$$

with normal velocity $V_n(t) = V_n(\cdot, t) \in C^0(\mathcal{S}(\rho(t)))$, where

$$V_n(x,t) := \rho_t(\xi,t)\mathbf{N}(\xi) \cdot \nu(x;\mathcal{S}(\rho(t))), \qquad x = \xi + \rho(\xi,t)\mathbf{N}(\xi) \in \mathcal{S}(\rho(t)), \quad \xi \in \Gamma.$$

We define the set of moving boundaries as

$$M_{[a,b]}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}) := \{ \mathcal{M}(\rho, [a,b]) \subset \mathbb{R}^d \times \mathbb{R} \mid \exists \rho \in R_{[a,b]}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}) \text{ such that (2.6) is satisfied} \}.$$

Now, we consider the quasi-stationary moving boundary problem stated as follows:

Problem 2.6. For given $\Gamma_{\circ} \in \mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}$, $f \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Sigma)$, and $g \in C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma)$, find T > 0 and $\mathcal{M} = \bigcup_{0 \le t \le T} \Gamma(t) \times \{t\}$ such that

$$\begin{cases} V_n(t) = -\frac{\partial}{\partial \nu} \left[u_{\mathcal{D}}(\Gamma(t)) - u_{\mathcal{N}}(\Gamma(t)) \right] & \text{on } \Gamma(t), \quad (0 \leqslant t \leqslant T), \\ \Gamma(0) = \Gamma_{\circ}, \end{cases}$$
(2.7)

where $u_{\rm D}(\Gamma(t))$ and $u_{\rm N}(\Gamma(t))$ are defined by (2.1) and (2.2), respectively.

We formally define the solution of Problem 2.6 as follows.

Definition 2.7. We say $\mathcal{M} = \bigcup_{0 \leqslant t \leqslant T} \Gamma(t) \times \{t\} \subset \mathbb{R}^d \times \mathbb{R}$ a solution of Problem 2.6, if for $\Gamma(0) = \Gamma_0$, there exists a collection of closed intervals $\{I_k\}_{k=1}^n$ such that $\bigcup_{k=1}^n I_k = [0,T]$, and for each k, there exists $t_k \in I_k$, $\Gamma_k \in \mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}$, and quasi-normal \mathbf{N}_k on Γ_k such that

$$\mathcal{M}\big|_{I_k} \in M_{I_k}(\Gamma_k, \mathbf{N}_k), \quad \text{where } \mathcal{M}\big|_{I_k} = \bigcup_{t \in I_k} \Gamma(t) \times \{t\},$$

is a solution of

$$V_n(t) = -\frac{\partial}{\partial \nu} \left[u_D(\Gamma(t)) - u_N(\Gamma(t)) \right]$$
 on $\Gamma(t)$, for $t \in I_k$, for each $k = 1, \dots, n$,

where $u_{\rm D}(\Gamma(t))$ and $u_{\rm N}(\Gamma(t))$ are defined by (2.1) and (2.2), respectively.

We note that the definition of V_n does not depend on the choice of Γ_k and \mathbf{N}_k .

Before we proceed further, we ask the following question in view of Definition 2.7: suppose $\mathcal{M}_{[0,T]}$ is a solution to (1.1), then is it true that $\mathcal{M}_{[t_*,T]}$ is also a solution to (1.1) for $t_* \in [0,T]$? The next lemma answers this question affirmatively.

Lemma 2.8. Let $\Gamma \in A^{2+\alpha}$, N be a quasi-normal vector on Γ ,

$$\mathcal{M} = \bigcup_{a \leqslant t \leqslant b} \Gamma(t) \times \{t\} \in M_{[a,b]}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}),$$

 $t_* \in [a, b]$, and \mathbf{N}_* be quasi-normal on $\Gamma(t_*)$. Then, there exists a $\tau > 0$ such that, with $I_* := [a, b] \cap [t_* - \tau, t_* + \tau]$, we have

$$\mathcal{M}|_{I_*} \in M_{I_*}(\Gamma(t_*), \mathbf{N}_*). \tag{2.8}$$

Proof. We start by noting that there exist $\varepsilon_* > 0$ such that

$$X_* \in \text{Diffeo}^{2+\alpha} \left(\Gamma(t_*) \times I_*, X_*(\Gamma(t_*) \times I_*) \right), \qquad X_*(x,r) := x + r \mathbf{N}_*(x),$$

where

$$(x,r) \in \Gamma(t_*) \times I_*, \qquad I_* := I_{\varepsilon_*} \cap [a,b], \qquad I_{\varepsilon_*} = [-\varepsilon_*, \varepsilon_*].$$

We claim the following:

There exists a $\tau > 0$ such that $\Gamma(t) \subset X_*(\Gamma(t_*) \times I_{**})$, for $t \in I_{**} := I_* \cap [t_* - \tau, t_* + \tau]$.

For $(y,t) \in \Gamma \times I_{**}$, we define

$$(x_*(y,t), \rho_*(y,t)) := X_*^{-1}(X(y,\rho(y,t))),$$

and for $(x,t) \in \Gamma(t_*) \times I_{**}$, we set

$$\widetilde{\rho}(x,t) := \rho_*(x_*(\cdot,t)^{-1}(x),t),$$

where $x_*(\cdot,t):\Gamma\to\Gamma(t_*)$. Hence, by construction

$$X(y, \rho(y,t)) = X_*(x, \tilde{\rho}(x,t))\Big|_{x=x_*(y,t)}.$$

Now, to validate (2.8), we need to show that

$$\tilde{\rho} \in C^0(I_{**}; C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma(t_*)) \cap C^1(I_{**}; C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma(t_*)). \tag{2.9}$$

This follows directly from the following assumptions:

$$(y,t) \in \Gamma \times I_{**} \subset \Gamma \times I_{*} \subset \Gamma \times [a,b],$$

$$\rho \in C^{0}(I_{*}; C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma)) \cap C^{1}(I_{*}; C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma)),$$

$$X \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma \times I_{\varepsilon_{0}}),$$

$$(x,t) \in \Gamma(t_{*}) \times I_{**} \subset \Gamma(t_{*}) \times I_{*},$$

as well as from the regularities of the following mappings:

$$\begin{split} [(y,t) \mapsto X(y,\rho(y,t))] &\in C^0(I_{**}; C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma;\mathbb{R}^d)) \cap C^1(I_{**}; C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma;\mathbb{R}^d)), \\ X_* &\in \mathrm{Diffeo}^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma(t_*) \times I_{**}, X_*(\Gamma(t_*) \times I_{**})), \\ \rho_* &\in C^0(I_{**}; C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma)) \cap C^1(I_{**}; C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma)), \\ x_* &\in C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma; \Gamma(t_*)), \\ x_*^{-1} &\in C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma(t_*); \Gamma). \end{split}$$

In view of Definition 2.7, the composition of these mappings leads to (2.9).

By Lemma 2.8, we can state an equivalent definition of the solution to Problem 2.6, given as follows:

Definition 2.9. We say $\mathcal{M} = \bigcup_{0 \le t \le T} \Gamma(t) \times \{t\} \subset \mathbb{R}^d \times \mathbb{R}$ is a solution to Problem 2.6 if, for all $t_* \in [0, T]$, there exist a < b and $\tau > 0$ such that $[t_* - \tau, t_* + \tau] \cap [0, T] \subset [a, b] \subset [0, T]$, and there exists a quasi-normal vector \mathbf{N}_* on $\Gamma(t_*)$ such that

$$\mathcal{M}_{[a,b]} \in M_{[a,b]}(\Gamma(t_*), \mathbf{N}_*), \quad \text{where } \mathcal{M}_{[a,b]} := \bigcup_{a \leqslant t \leqslant b} \Gamma(t) \times \{t\},$$

and $u_D(\Gamma(t))$ and $u_N(\Gamma(t))$, defined by (2.1) and (2.2), solve (2.7).

Remark 2.10. The definition of the solution to Problem 2.6 given in Definition 2.9 is indeed equivalent to Definition 2.7. To see this, we note that, for all $t \in [0,T]$, there exists $\tau(t) > 0$ such that $[t - \tau(t), t + \tau(t)] \cap [0,T] \subset [a,b] \subset [0,T]$, and there exists a quasi-normal vector **N** on $\Gamma(t)$ such that

$$\mathcal{M}_{[a,b]} \in M_{[a,b]}(\Gamma(t), \mathbf{N}),$$

and $u_D(\Gamma(t))$ and $u_N(\Gamma(t))$, defined by (2.1) and (2.2), solve (2.7). Now, we observe that

$$\emptyset \neq \mathcal{O}(t) := \begin{cases} (t - \tau(t), t + \tau(t)) \cap (0, T) & \text{for } t \in (0, T), \\ [0, \tau(0)) & \text{for } t = 0, \\ (t - \tau(t), T] & \text{for } t = T. \end{cases}$$

Note that \mathcal{O} is open in [0,T] and $\bigcup_{t\in[0,T]}\mathcal{O}(t)=[0,T]$.

3. Main results

Our main objective is to demonstrate the (local-in-time) solvability of system (1.1) by applying the techniques outlined by Solonnikov in [15]. Specifically, we refer to the proofs of [15], Theorems 1.1 and 3.1, and also to [41] for a related application of this method.

Notations. Let l be a nonnegative real number. We denote by $C^0([0,T];C^l(\overline{\Omega}))$ the space of continuous functions with respect to

$$(x,t) \in \left\{ (x,t) \mid t \in [0,T], x \in \overline{\Omega} \right\}$$

with the finite norm

$$\max_{0 \leqslant t \leqslant T} |u(\cdot, t)|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(l)},$$

where

$$\begin{split} |u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(l)} &:= \|u\|_{C^{[l],l-[l]}(\overline{\Omega})} = |u|_{[l],l-[l];\,\overline{\Omega}} = \sum_{|j| < l} \max_{\overline{\Omega}} |D^j u(x)| + [u]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(l)}, \\ [u]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(l)} &:= [u]_{[l],l-[l];\,\overline{\Omega}} = \sum_{|j| = [l]} \max_{x,\hat{x} \in \overline{\Omega}} \frac{|D^j u(x) - D^j u(\hat{x})|}{|x - \hat{x}|^{l-[l]}}. \end{split}$$

For example, $|u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)}$ is the maximum norm of u(x), i.e., $|u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)} = \max_{x \in \overline{\Omega}} |u(x)|$. Also, in a more familiar notation, $|u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(k+\alpha)} := \|u\|_{C^{k,\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})}$ where $l = k+\alpha$, $k = [l] \in \mathbb{N} \cup \{0\}$, $\alpha = [l] - l \in (0,1)$; see [42], equations (4.5)–(4.6), p. 53. The spaces $C^0([0,T];C^l(\Sigma))$ and $C^0([0,T];C^l(\Gamma))$ are introduced in a similar manner. Here, $C^{[l],l-[l]} := C^k$ for

integer $l = k \in \mathbb{N}$. Throughout the paper, we use c as a general positive constant, meaning it can vary in value depending on the context.

Let a and b be fixed real numbers such that b > a, $k \in \mathbb{N} \cup \{0\}$, and $\alpha \in (0,1)$. For functions $\varphi = \varphi(\xi,t) \in C^0([a,b]; C^{k+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))$, the norm

$$\max_{a \leqslant \tau \leqslant b} |\varphi(\cdot, \tau)|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(k+\alpha)},$$

will appear many times in the paper (especially from Section 7 onwards and in Appendix E.3). So, for economy of space, we introduce the following notation

$$|\varphi|_{\Xi;\,[a,b]}^{(k+\alpha)}:=\max_{a\leqslant\tau\leqslant b}|\varphi(\cdot,\tau)|_\Xi^{(k+\alpha)}\,,\qquad\Xi\in\{\Omega,\overline{\Omega},\Gamma,\Sigma\}.$$

For nested maximum norms, we write

$$|\varphi|_{\Xi;\,[a,b]}^{\infty}:=\max_{a\leqslant\tau\leqslant b}\max_{\Xi}|\varphi(\cdot,\tau)|\,,\qquad\Xi\in\{\overline{\Omega},\Gamma,\Sigma\}.$$

Additionally, for functions $u=u(\xi,t),\ v=v(\xi,t)\in C^0([a,b];C^{k+\alpha}(\Xi)),\ \Xi\in\{\overline{\Omega},\Gamma,\Sigma\}$, we introduce the following specially defined norms

$$\|(u,v)\|_{\Xi;[a,b]}^{(k+\alpha)} := |u|_{\Xi;[a,b]}^{(k+\alpha)} + |v|_{\Xi;[a,b]}^{(k+\alpha)} = \max_{a \le t \le b} |u(\cdot,\tau)|_{\Xi}^{(k+\alpha)} + \max_{a \le t \le b} |v(\cdot,\tau)|_{\Xi}^{(k+\alpha)}.$$

For a pair of functions with subscripts \cdot_D and \cdot_N , we simply write

$$\|\varphi_{D,N}\|_{\Xi;[a,b]}^{(k+\alpha)} := \|(\varphi_D,\varphi_N)\|_{\Xi;[a,b]}^{(k+\alpha)}$$

especially when such a norm appears many times in a sequence of arguments. Moreover, and specifically for the boundary data $f \in C^0([0,T];C^{2+\alpha}(\Sigma))$ and $g \in C^0([0,T];C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma))$, $[a,b] \subseteq [0,T]$, we simply write

$$\|(f,g)\|_{\Sigma; [a,b]}^{(2+\alpha)} := \max_{a \leq \tau \leq b} |f(\cdot,\tau)|_{\Sigma}^{(2+\alpha)} + \max_{a \leq \tau \leq b} |g(\cdot,\tau)|_{\Sigma}^{(1+\alpha)}, \qquad \|(f,g)\| := \|(f,g)\|_{\Sigma, [0,T]}^{(2+\alpha)}.$$

Additionally, for $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\rho \in C^0([a,b]; C^{k+\alpha}(\Xi)) \cap C^1([a,b]; C^{k-1+\alpha}(\Xi))$ and $\Xi \in {\overline{\Omega}, \Gamma}$, we introduce the norm notation

$$\|\|\rho\|\|_{\Xi;[a,b]}^{(k+\alpha)} := \max_{a \leqslant \tau \leqslant b} |\rho(\cdot,\tau)|_{\Xi}^{(k+\alpha)} + \max_{a \leqslant \tau \leqslant b} \left| \frac{d}{d\tau} \rho(\cdot,\tau) \right|_{\Xi}^{(k-1+\alpha)},$$

and another special notation

$$\||\rho||_{\overline{\Omega}, \Gamma; [a,b]}^{(k+\alpha)} := \max_{a \leqslant \tau \leqslant b} |\rho(\cdot, \tau)|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(k+\alpha)} + \max_{a \leqslant \tau \leqslant b} \left| \frac{d}{d\tau} \rho(\cdot, \tau) \right|_{\Gamma}^{(k-1+\alpha)}.$$

Finally, for any pair of well-defined functions φ_D and φ_N , we will extensively use the following special notations for convenience:

$$\varphi_{\mathrm{DN}} := \varphi_{\mathrm{D}} - \varphi_{\mathrm{N}} \quad \text{and} \quad \varphi_{\mathrm{ND}} := \varphi_{\mathrm{N}} - \varphi_{\mathrm{D}}.$$

For example, we write $u_{\rm DN} = u_{\rm D} - u_{\rm N}$ and $u_{\rm DN}(\Gamma) = u_{\rm D}(\Gamma) - u_{\rm N}(\Gamma)$.

To prepare for later discussions involving the differentiability of certain linear and bounded operators (see Lem. 4.3), we introduce the following function spaces. The space $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{Y})$ denotes the set of linear and continuous (bounded) operators between two normed vector spaces \mathcal{X} and \mathcal{Y} . We also consider the space $C^{\omega}(\mathcal{U}, \mathcal{V})$, consisting of real analytic functions from a Banach space \mathcal{U} into \mathcal{V} , understood in the sense of Fréchet or Gâteaux differentiability.

Prior to stating the primary result we seek to establish in this study, we observe that, in the original inverse geometry problem setup, f and g are solely space-dependent. However, for the remainder of the discussion, otherwise specified, we shall assume that these functions are also (pseudo-)time-dependent. Specifically, we let f = f(x, t) and g = g(x, t), where $x \in \Omega(t)$ and $t \in [0, T]$, in (1.1), and assume that they are both positive-valued.

We consider the following conditions, which are essential for the analytical framework underlying the proof of the well-posedness of (1.1):

Assumption 3.1. • For some $\alpha \in (0,1)$,

$$\Sigma, \Gamma = \Gamma_{\circ} \in C^{2+\alpha}, \quad f \in C^{0}([0, T]; C^{2+\alpha}(\Sigma)), \ f > 0, \quad g \in C^{0}([0, T]; C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma)), \ g > 0,$$

such that

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial u}(u_{\rm DN}(\Gamma_{\circ})) > 0,$$
 (A1)

where $u_{\rm D}$ and $u_{\rm N}$ respectively solves (2.1) and (2.2) in $\Omega(\Gamma_{\circ})$.

• There exists a $t^{\star\star} \in (0,T]$ such that

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial u}(u_{\rm DN}(\Gamma(t))) > 0, \quad \text{for } t \in [0, t^{\star\star}].$$

It is necessary to comment on the key assumptions above, taking into account both its technical and practical implications. The positivity of the difference between the normal derivatives, as expressed in (A1), is not only an essential requirement for proving the well-posedness of system (1.1) (see comment at the bottom of page 584 in [43]), but also plays a crucial role in the reconstruction procedure, and can, in fact, be ensured in practical computations. This condition is satisfied when the initial guess in the algorithm is chosen sufficiently large to fully enclose the exact cavity – a choice that is both natural and effective in numerical implementations, at least in simple settings (see, e.g., [44]). Appendix A further illustrates this point in the setting of axially symmetric domains through a detailed comparison of normal derivatives.

Our main theorem is formulated as follows.

Theorem 3.2. Let Assumption 3.1 be satisfied. Then, there exists a unique solution $\Gamma(t)$, $u_D(x,t)$, and $u_N(x,t)$ to (1.1) defined on some small time-interval $I^* = [0, t^*]$, where $t^* < T$. The free surface $\Gamma(t)$ is described by the equation

$$x = \xi + \rho(\xi, t) \mathbf{N}(\xi), \qquad \xi \in \Gamma, \tag{3.1}$$

where ξ is the local coordinate on the surface Γ and \mathbf{N} is a smooth vector field on Γ such that $\mathbf{N} \cdot \nu_0 \geqslant \nu_{\star} > 0$, where ν_0 is the unit normal vector to the surface Γ directed inward the domain $\Omega(\Gamma)$. The function $\rho \in C^0(I^*; C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma))$ has extra smoothness with respect to the variable t; namely, $\rho_t \in C^0(I^*; C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma))$. Meanwhile, the functions $u_D(x,t)$ and $u_N(x,t)$ are defined in $\Omega(t)$ for $t \in I^*$ and both belong to the space $C^0(I^*; C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega(t)}))$. Moreover, the following estimate hold

$$||u_{D,N}||_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + ||\rho||_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c||(f,g)||_{\Sigma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c||(f,g)||.$$
(3.2)

for some constant c > 0, for all $t \in I^*$.

Given the short-time existence of solution to (1.1), we can also prove the uniqueness of short-time solution to the system.

Theorem 3.3. A solution of Problem 2.6 is unique.

Proof. If there exist two solutions $\mathcal{M}_i := \bigcup \Gamma^i(t) \times \{t\}$, i = 1, 2, to Problem 2.6, then we need to show that $\mathcal{M}_1 = \mathcal{M}_2$. We prove the assertion via a contradiction. Let us assume that $\mathcal{M}_1 \neq \mathcal{M}_2$. Then, there exists $t_* \in [0, T)$ and a sequence $\{t_k\}_{k=1}^{\infty} \in (t_*, T]$ such that

$$\begin{cases}
\mathcal{M}_1|_{[0,t_*]} = \mathcal{M}_2|_{[0,t_*]}, \\
T \geqslant t_1 > t_2 > \dots > t_*, & \text{where } \lim_{k \to \infty} t_k = t_*, \text{ and} \\
\Gamma^1(t_k) \neq \Gamma^2(t_k), & \text{for } k = 1, 2, \dots
\end{cases}$$
(3.3)

Since $\Gamma(t_*) := \Gamma^1(t_*) = \Gamma^2(t_*)$ satisfies the condition in Theorem 3.2, there exists $t_{**} \in (t_*, T]$ such that there is a unique $\Gamma(t)$ for $t \in [t_*, t_{**}]$. However, this contradicts the last two lines in (3.3). Thus, \mathcal{M}_1 and \mathcal{M}_2 have to be the same solution to Problem 2.6.

Before we proceed, we provide additional comments on condition (A1) (cf. (A3)). To this end, we first consider the following lemma.

Lemma 3.4. Let $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^d$, of class C^2 , be an open bounded connected set with non-intersecting boundaries Γ and Σ . Assume that $v \in C^2(\Omega) \cap C^0(\overline{\Omega}) \cap C^1(\Sigma)$ and

$$-\Delta v = 0$$
 in Ω , $v = 0$ on Γ , $\frac{\partial v}{\partial \nu} > 0$ on Σ .

Then,

$$v > 0$$
 in Ω .

Proof. The proof proceeds by contradiction and uses the maximum principle [45], Chap. 6.4, p. 344. We start by observing that $v \not\equiv \text{constant}$ in Ω ; otherwise, v = 0 in Ω because v = 0 on Γ , and so $\frac{\partial v}{\partial \nu} = 0$ on Σ , which contradicts the assumption. We suppose that

$$\inf_{\Omega} v < 0.$$

Then, by the maximum principle,

$$0 > \inf_{\Omega} v = \min_{\bar{\Omega}} v = \min_{\Sigma} v.$$

That is,

there exists
$$x_0 \in \Sigma$$
 such that $v(x_0) = \min_{\Sigma} v = \min_{\Omega} v$.

Because v = 0 on Γ , we deduce that

$$\frac{\partial v}{\partial \nu}(x_0) < 0, \qquad x_0 \in \Sigma.$$

This is a contradiction to our assumption that $\frac{\partial v}{\partial \nu} > 0$ on Σ . Therefore, $\inf_{\Omega} v > 0$, and thus v > 0 in Ω , proving the lemma.

Using Lemma 3.4, we will prove in the next proposition that there exists a suitable choice of Γ_{\circ} such that condition (A1) holds. In fact, we will use the same idea as in Appendices A.1 and A.2, which compares the normal derivatives on the free boundary of concentric circles and spheres.

Proposition 3.5. Let $\Omega = D \setminus \overline{\omega} \subset \mathbb{R}^d$, of class $C^{2+\alpha}$, be an open bounded connected set with non-intersecting boundaries $\partial \omega = \Gamma \in \mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}$ and $\Sigma = \partial D$. Assume that $\partial \omega^* = \Gamma^* \in \mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}$ is the exact interior boundary that satisfies (1.2) and ω strictly contains $\overline{\omega}^*$ (i.e., Γ lies entirely in the interior of $\overline{\Omega}^* = \overline{D \setminus \overline{\omega}^*}$). Let $f \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Sigma)$ and $g \in C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma)$. Then, the functions $u_D(\Gamma)$ and $u_N(\Gamma)$ satisfying (2.1) and (2.2), respectively, satisfy the following condition

$$u_D > u_N$$
 in Ω .

Consequently,

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \nu}(u_D - u_N) > 0$$
 on Γ .

Proof. Let the assumptions of the proposition be satisified. Let us denote by $(\Omega^*, u^*(\Omega^*))$, $\Omega^* = D \setminus \overline{\omega}^*$, Ω^* is of class $C^{2+\alpha}$, $u^* \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Omega) \cap C^{0+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})$, the exact solution pair of the free boundary problem (1.2) with the corresponding exact interior boundary $\Gamma^* = \partial \omega^* \in \mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}$. We note the following observation

$$\begin{cases}
\Delta u^* = \Delta u_{\rm D} = \Delta u_{\rm N} = 0 & \text{in } \Omega, \\
u^* = u_{\rm D} > 0 & \text{on } \Sigma, \\
u_{\rm D} = u_{\rm N} = 0 & \text{on } \Gamma, \\
u^* > 0 & \text{on } \Gamma.
\end{cases}$$
(3.4)

Let us define

$$v_{\mathrm{D}} := -u_{\mathrm{D}} + u^{\star}$$
 and $v_{\mathrm{N}} := -u_{\mathrm{N}} + u^{\star}$.

Then, from (3.4), we have the following

$$\begin{cases}
\Delta v_{\rm D} = \Delta v_{\rm D} = 0 & \text{in } \Omega, \\
v_{\rm D} = 0 & \text{on } \Sigma, \\
\frac{\partial v_{\rm N}}{\partial \nu} = 0 & \text{on } \Sigma, \\
v_{\rm D} = v_{\rm N} = u^* > 0 & \text{on } \Gamma.
\end{cases}$$
(3.5)

We deduce from (3.5) that

$$v_{\rm D} > 0 \quad \text{in } \Omega \qquad \text{and} \qquad \frac{\partial v_{\rm D}}{\partial \nu} < 0 \quad \text{on } \Sigma.$$
 (3.6)

Now, we define

$$v = v_{\rm N} - v_{\rm D} = (-u_{\rm N} + u^{\star}) - (-u_{\rm D} + u^{\star}) = u_{\rm D} - u_{\rm N}.$$

П

Hence, we have

$$-\Delta v = 0$$
 in Ω , $v = 0$ on Γ , $\frac{\partial v}{\partial v} > 0$ on Σ .

Therefore, by Lemma 3.4, we get

$$u_{\rm D} - u_{\rm N} = v > 0$$
 in Ω .

Consequently, when $\Gamma \in \mathcal{A}^{2+\alpha}$ lies entirely in the interior of $\overline{\Omega}^{\star} = \overline{D \setminus \overline{\omega}^{\star}}$, we get

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \nu} (u_{\rm D} - u_{\rm N}) > 0 \quad \text{on } \Gamma,$$

which concludes the proof.

Theorem 3.2 follows from an auxiliary result (see Thm. 4.4) which we issue in the next section.

4. Problem transformation onto a fixed domain

To carry out our analysis, we first need to transform system (1.1) into a problem over a fixed domain via the change of variables to be described below. Such technique has been used in many studies (see, e.g., [15]) and can be achieved by a special mapping – a modification of the well-known Hanzawa transform – of the pseudo-time dependent domain $\Omega(t)$ onto the fixed domain Ω . The target equation is given by (4.7), and the main result we want to state here is emphasized in Theorem 4.4.

From this point forward, we assume that Assumption 3.1 holds and that **N** is a quasi-normal vector on Γ (see Def. 2.1). Also, for some technical purposes, we assume there is a constant $\nu_{\star} > 0$ such that

$$\mathbf{N}(\xi) \cdot \nu_{\circ}(\xi) \geqslant \nu_{\star} > 0, \qquad \xi \in \Gamma,$$
 (A2)

where ν_{\circ} denotes the unit inward normal vector to Γ . This requirement will be made clear in Section 6. Given a constant $\varepsilon_{\circ} > 0$, it was shown in [15], Sect. 3, p. 134 that the tubular strip

$$S_{\varepsilon_0} = \{ \xi + \mathbf{N}(\xi) \lambda \mid |\lambda| < \varepsilon_0, \xi \in \Gamma \}$$

contains some neighborhood of Γ where the equation $x = \xi + \mathbf{N}(\xi)\lambda$ determines some functions $\xi(x)$ and $\lambda(x)$ of class $C^{2+\alpha}$ (see the proof of Prop. 2.4). For sufficiently small t > 0, the free boundary $\Gamma(t)$ is contained in $S_{\varepsilon_{\circ}}$ (cf. Prop. 2.4) and can be described by the equation $\lambda = \rho(\xi, t)$. Accordingly, for

$$\rho \in R_{\circ}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}) := \{ \rho \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma; \mathbb{R}) \mid \|\rho\|_{\infty} < \varepsilon_{\circ} \}$$

we define

$$S(\rho) := \{ x \in \mathbb{R}^d \mid x = \xi + \mathbf{N}(\xi)\rho(\xi), \ \xi \in \Gamma \}.$$

$$(4.1)$$

We introduce the admissible set of hypersurfaces consisting of d-1 dimensional $C^{2+\alpha}$ manifold embedded in \mathbb{R}^d as follows

$$H_{\varepsilon_{\circ}}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}) := \{ \mathcal{S}(\rho) \mid \rho \in R_{\circ}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}) \}.$$

The following definition introduces a family of admissible moving surfaces (or moving boundaries).

Definition 4.1. We say that a moving surface (or moving boundary) \mathcal{M} is *admissible*, and we write $\mathcal{M} \in M_{[0,T]}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N})$, if and only if

$$\begin{cases} \mathcal{M} = \bigcup_{0 \leqslant t \leqslant T} \Gamma(t) \times \{t\} \subset \mathbb{R}^d \times \mathbb{R}, \\ \Gamma(t) = \mathcal{S}(\rho(t)) \in H_{\varepsilon_o}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}), \text{ for all } t \in [0, T], \\ \rho \in R_{[0, T]}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}), \end{cases}$$

where $R_{[0,T]}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N})$ is the set given in (2.5) with $\varepsilon_0 = \varepsilon_{\circ}$.

For every function $\rho \in R_{[0,T]}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N})$, we put into correspondence its extension

$$\tilde{\rho}(y,t) := E\rho(y,t),\tag{4.2}$$

where E is a linear and bounded map

$$E: R_{[0,T]}(\Gamma, \mathbf{N}) \to C^0([0,T]; C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})) \cap C^1([0,T]; C^{1+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))$$

$$\tag{4.3}$$

satisfying

$$||E\rho||_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c |||\rho||_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)},$$

for some constant c > 0. Such an extension of ρ from $\Gamma \times [0, T]$ to $\overline{\Omega} \times [0, T]$ can be constructed in different ways. In this investigation, we assume that $\tilde{\rho} = \tilde{\rho}(y, t) := E\rho(y, t)$ satisfies the following boundary value problem:

$$-\Delta \tilde{\rho} = 0, \ y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \qquad \tilde{\rho}|_{y \in \Gamma} = \rho, \qquad \tilde{\rho}|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, \tag{4.4}$$

where the latter condition is essential because Σ is fixed. Using this extension allows for a more straightforward development of later arguments. Throughout the remainder of our discussion, we assume without further mention that $\tilde{\rho}$ satisfies (4.4).

To meet certain technical requirements, we extend the vector field **N** (retaining the same notation) to the domain S_{ε_0} by defining $\mathbf{N}(x) = \mathbf{N}(\xi(x))$. We then further extend it to the domain $\Omega \cup S_{\varepsilon_0}$, where $\Omega = \Omega(0)$, ensuring that the regularity $\mathbf{N} \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Omega \cup S_{\varepsilon_0})$ is preserved (cf. Rem. 2.3).

Let us introduce the change of variables y = Y(x,t) under which $\Omega(t)$, t > 0, is transformed to Ω and define the inverse transform $Y^{-1}: \Omega \to \Omega(t)$ as follows:

$$Y^{-1}(y,t) = x \in \Omega(t), \quad x = y + \mathbf{N}(y)\tilde{\rho}(y,t), \tag{4.5}$$

for $y \in \Omega$ and t > 0. The given map is bijective, as stated in the following lemma.

Lemma 4.2. Let $Z(y) := y + \mathbf{N}(y)\tilde{\rho}(y), \ y \in \overline{\Omega}$, such that $Z = |_{y \in \Sigma} y$ and $Z|_{y \in \Gamma} = y + \mathbf{N}(y)\rho(y)$. Then, for sufficiently small $|\tilde{\rho}| > 0$, the map $Z : \overline{\Omega} \to \overline{\Omega}(\rho)$, where $\overline{\Omega}(\rho)$ is the annular domain bounded by Σ and $S(\rho)$ is bijective.

Proof. See Appendix E.2.
$$\Box$$

To transform the Hele–Shaw-like system (1.1) onto a fixed domain, we make a few additional preparations. The Jacobi matrix $J = (J_{km})_{km}$ (k, m = 1, ..., d) of the transform Y^{-1} has entries

$$\mathsf{J}_{km} = (D_y Y^{-1}(y,t))_{km} = \delta_{km} + N_k \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_m} + \frac{\partial N_k}{\partial y_m} \tilde{\rho}.$$

Correspondingly, we denote by J^{km} the entries of the inverse matrix J^{-1} , *i.e.*,

$$\mathsf{J}^{-1} = \left(\mathsf{J}^{km}\right)_{km} = \left((D_x Y(x,t))_{km}\right)_{km} = \left((D_y Y^{-1}(y,t))_{km}\right)_{km}^{-1},$$

which is the Jacobi matrix of the transform Y(x,t). Denoting $\mathsf{J}^{-\top}=(\mathsf{J}^{-1})^{\top}$, the operator $\nabla_x:=(\partial_{x_1},\ldots,\partial_{x_d})$, $\partial_{x_k}:=\partial/\partial x_k,\ k=1,\ldots,d$, takes the form

$$\mathsf{J}^{-\top} \nabla_y^{\top} := \left(\sum_{k=1}^d \mathsf{J}^{km} \frac{\partial}{\partial y_k} \right), \quad m = 1, \dots, d, \qquad \nabla_y := \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial y_1}, \dots, \frac{\partial}{\partial y_d} \right). \tag{4.6}$$

The following relation between the inward unit normal vectors ν_o to Γ and $\nu(t)$ to $\Gamma(t)$ (cf. [15], p. 135 or see [1], Thm. 4.4, p. 488) holds:

$$\nu(t)\circ Y^{-1} = \frac{\mathsf{J}^{-\top}\nu_\circ}{|\mathsf{J}^{-\top}\nu_\circ|} \qquad \Longleftrightarrow \qquad \nu(t) = \frac{\mathsf{J}^{-\top}\nu_\circ}{|\mathsf{J}^{-\top}\nu_\circ|}\circ Y.$$

Applying the above change of variables and identities, we can pass from the t-dependent system (1.1) to the problem in the given fixed domain Ω with respect to the three unknown functions $U_{\mathcal{D}}(y,t) = u_{\mathcal{D}}(Y^{-1}(y,t),t)$, $U_{\mathcal{N}}(y,t) = u_{\mathcal{N}}(Y^{-1}(y,t),t)$, and $\tilde{\rho}(y,t)$, $y \in \Omega$. More precisely, given the harmonic function $\tilde{\rho}$ satisfying (4.4), we have the following transformation of (1.1) using the map $Y: \Omega(t) \to \Omega$, where $Y(x,t) = y \in \Omega$, for t > 0:

$$\begin{cases}
\sum_{m,p=1}^{d} \mathsf{A}_{mp} \frac{\partial^{2} U_{\mathrm{D}}}{\partial y_{m} \partial y_{p}} + \sum_{k,m,p=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{mk} \frac{\partial \mathsf{J}^{pk}}{\partial y_{m}} \frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{D}}}{\partial y_{p}} = 0, \quad y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \\
U_{\mathrm{D}}|_{y \in \Sigma} = f(y,t), \qquad U_{\mathrm{D}}|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\sum_{m,p=1}^{d} \mathsf{A}_{mp} \frac{\partial^{2} U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial y_{m} \partial y_{p}} + \sum_{k,m,p=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{mk} \frac{\partial \mathsf{J}^{pk}}{\partial y_{m}} \frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial y_{p}} = 0, \quad y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \\
\frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial \nu} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = g(y,t), \qquad U_{\mathrm{N}}|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\left(\frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial t} + B_{\tilde{\rho}} \frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{DN}}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}}\right) \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\tilde{\rho}|_{y \in \Gamma, t=0} = 0.
\end{cases} \tag{4.7}$$

where

$$\mathsf{A}_{mp} := \sum_{k=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{mk} \mathsf{J}^{pk}, \qquad m, p = 1, \dots, d,$$

are the entries of the matrix $A := J^{-1}J^{-\top}$, and

$$B_{\tilde{\rho}} := \left(\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathsf{J}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ} \right)^{-1} \left(\nu_{\circ} \cdot \mathsf{A} \nu_{\circ} \right). \tag{4.8}$$

We note here that $\frac{\partial U_{\rm DN}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}} > 0$ is consistent with Assumption 3.1. The detailed computation of system (4.7) is provided in Appendix C.

For convenience of later use, we will write problem (4.7) in compact form. For this purpose, for $\rho \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma)$, we define the following linear and bounded operators:

$$\begin{cases}
\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}: C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}) \to C^{\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}), & \mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}} = \sum_{m,p=1}^{d} \mathsf{A}_{mp} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial y_{m} \partial y_{p}}, \\
\mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}: C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}) \to C^{1+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}), & \mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}} = -\sum_{j,k=1}^{d} N_{k} \mathsf{J}^{jk} \frac{\partial}{\partial y_{j}}, \\
\mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}}: C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}) \to C^{1+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}), \\
\mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}} = -\sum_{p=1}^{d} \left[\sum_{j,k,m,q=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{km} \mathsf{J}^{pj} \mathsf{J}^{qm} \left(\frac{\partial N_{j}}{\partial y_{q}} \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_{k}} + \frac{\partial N_{j}}{\partial y_{k}} \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_{q}} + \frac{\partial^{2} N_{j}}{\partial y_{k} \partial y_{q}} \tilde{\rho} \right) \right] \frac{\partial}{\partial y_{p}}.
\end{cases} \tag{4.9}$$

The main equations in system (4.7) can then be written as follows

$$\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}U_{\mathrm{D}} + \mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}U_{\mathrm{D}}\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}\tilde{\rho} + \mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}}U_{\mathrm{D}} = 0 \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}U_{\mathrm{N}} + \mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}U_{\mathrm{N}}\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}\tilde{\rho} + \mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}}U_{\mathrm{N}} = 0. \tag{4.10}$$

We note here that $\mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}} \equiv 0$ when $\tilde{\rho} \equiv 0$.

Lemma 4.3. The following regularities hold:

$$\begin{cases}
[\rho \mapsto \mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}] \in C^{\omega}(C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma), \mathcal{B}(C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}), C^{\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))), \\
[\rho \mapsto \mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}], \ [\rho \mapsto \mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}}] \in C^{\omega}(C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma), \mathcal{B}(C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}), C^{1+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))).
\end{cases}$$
(4.11)

Proof. We will only prove our claim that

$$[\rho \mapsto \mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}] \in C^{\omega}(C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma), \mathcal{B}(C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}), C^{\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))). \tag{4.12}$$

The other two results can be proven in a similar fashion.

We let $\rho \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma)$. In view of (4.2) and (4.4), we define

$$\tilde{\rho}(y) := E\rho(y), \quad y \in \Gamma, \quad \text{where } E \in \mathcal{B}(C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma); C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})),$$
(4.13)

and such that

$$-\Delta \tilde{\rho} = 0, \ y \in \Omega, \qquad \tilde{\rho}|_{y \in \Gamma} = \rho, \qquad \tilde{\rho}|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0. \tag{4.14}$$

We claim that

$$\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}} \in \mathcal{B}(C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}), C^{\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})).$$
 (4.15)

Let us note that the following regularities hold:

•
$$\left[\tilde{\rho} \mapsto \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_m}\right] \in \mathcal{B}(C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}), C^{1+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})), \text{ for all } m = 1, \dots, d;$$

- $D_{mp} := \frac{\partial^2}{\partial_{u_m} \partial_{u_p}} \in \mathcal{B}(C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}), C^{\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})), \text{ for all } m, p = 1, \dots, d;$
- $A_{mp} \in C^{\omega}(C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})); C^{1+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))$, for all m, p = 1, ..., d;• for $u \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})$, we have $\Lambda_{mp} \in C^{\omega}(C^{\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})); C^{\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))$, for all m, p = 1, ..., d, where $\Lambda_{mp}^{\rho}(x) :=$ $A_{mn}(\tilde{\rho})(x)u(x), x \in \overline{\Omega}.$

The latter regularity result follows from the fact that the following map

$$\mathscr{F}:C^{\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})\times C^{\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})\longrightarrow C^{\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}), \qquad (\varphi,\psi)\longmapsto \varphi\psi,$$

is analytic (cf. [42], p. 53); i.e. $\mathscr{F} \in C^{\omega}(C^{\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}) \times C^{\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}); C^{\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))$). Hence, using $\Lambda_{mp}^{\rho}(x) = \mathscr{F}(A_{mp}(\tilde{\rho}), u)$, we establish the final regularity result mentioned above. Consequently, by composing the given maps, we validate (4.15). To complete the proof, we use the composition of the map $\rho \mapsto \tilde{\rho}$ (defined through the extension operator E) and the operator $\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}$, which allows us to confirm our claim (4.12).

Finally, our main result, stated in Theorem 3.2, follows from the next result, which asserts the local-in-time solvability of (4.7).

Theorem 4.4. Let Assumption 3.1 be satisfied. Specifically,

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \nu_0} \left(U_{DN}(y,0) \right) > 0, \qquad y \in \Gamma. \tag{A3}$$

Then, problem (4.7) has a unique solution $(\tilde{\rho}(y,t), U_D(y,t), U_N(y,t)), y \in \Omega$, that is defined for $t \in I^*$ with $t^* < T$, and such that the following regularities hold:

$$\tilde{\rho} \in C^0(I^{\star}; C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})), \quad \tilde{\rho}_t|_{\Gamma} \in C^0(I^{\star}; C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma)), \quad U_D(y,t), \ U_N(y,t) \in C^0(I^{\star}; C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})).$$

Moreover, the following estimate holds

$$||U_{D,N}||_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + |||\tilde{\rho}||_{\overline{\Omega}, \Gamma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c|||(f,g)||_{\Sigma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c|||(f,g)|||, \tag{4.16}$$

for some constant c > 0, for all $t \in I^*$.

5. Regularity of solutions on a fixed domain

Our immediate aim is to distinguish between the linear components of the main conditions and the dynamic boundary conditions in the nonlinear problem arising from (4.7). The complete formulation of this nonlinear problem will be formally presented in Section 6, specifically in equation (6.1). This formulation is derived by introducing two new variables that represent the difference between the solutions of two states: one corresponding to the transformed problem on a varied domain (cf. (4.7)) and the other corresponding to the problem on a fixed domain, which will be introduced in this section. Part of the analysis requires understanding the unique solvability of a pure Dirichlet problem and a mixed Dirichlet-Neumann problem, as well as obtaining estimates for the solutions of such equations. In this section, we lay the groundwork for these preparations.

Let $u_{\mathrm{D}}^0 := u_{\mathrm{D}}(x,0), f_0 := f(\cdot,0) \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Sigma)$, and consider the pure Dirichlet problem

$$\Delta u_{\rm D}^0 = 0 \quad \text{in } \Omega, \qquad u_{\rm D}^0 = f_0 \quad \text{on } \Sigma, \qquad u_{\rm D}^0 = 0 \quad \text{on } \Gamma.$$
 (5.1)

The solvability of (5.1) in the space $C^{k+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})$ (Ω a bounded region) is well-known and is given, for instance, in [49], Thm. 1.1, p. 107 or [50], Chap. V.36, I, p. 166 (see also Kellogg's Thm. [51, 52]). In particular, we have the following result.

Lemma 5.1. For any $f_0 \in C^{2+\alpha}(\Sigma)$, there exists a unique solution $u_D^0 \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})$ to (5.1).

Proof. See, for example, [42], Theorem 6.14, p. 107.

Remark 5.2. It is worth to emphasize here that, for k = 0, 1, ... and $\alpha \in (0, 1)$, the space $C^{k+\alpha}(\Omega)$ essentially coincides with $C^{k+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})$ for any open (bounded) set $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ [53], Proposition 1.1.7, p. 6.

Now, let $u_N^0 := u_N(x,0)$, $g_0 := g(\cdot,0) \in C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma)$, and consider the following mixed Dirichlet-Neumann boundary value problem

$$\Delta u_{\rm N}^0 = 0 \quad \text{in } \Omega, \qquad \frac{\partial u_{\rm N}^0}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} = g_0 \quad \text{on } \Sigma, \qquad u_{\rm N}^0 = 0 \quad \text{on } \Gamma.$$
 (5.2)

In the next proposition, we aim to prove that $u_N^0 \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})$, provided that $g_0 \in C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma)$.

Lemma 5.3. Let $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ be an annular open bounded set with $C^{2+\alpha}$ boundary $\partial \Omega = \Sigma \cup \Gamma$ and $g_0 \in C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma)$. Then Equation (5.2) has the unique solution $u_N^0 \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})$.

Proof. Let us choose an annular connected open bounded set Ω_1 with exterior boundary Γ and interior boundary S of class $C^{0,\alpha} \cap C^{\infty}$. We denote by Ω_2 the annular open bounded set contained in Ω whose boundary are S and Σ . Obviously, $\Omega_1 \cap \Omega_2 = \emptyset$ and $\Omega_1 \cup \Omega_2 = \Omega$. We then consider the following pure Dirichlet boundary value problem

$$\Delta V = 0 \quad \text{in } \Omega_1, \qquad V = u_N^0 \quad \text{on } S, \qquad V = 0 \quad \text{on } \Gamma.$$
 (5.3)

By [45], Theorem 3, p. 316, we know that $u_{\rm N}^0 \in C^\infty(\Omega)$, in particular, $u_{\rm N}^0 \in C^2(\Omega)$. Hence, $u_{\rm N}^0 \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}_1)$ by [42], Theorem 4.6, p. 60. This implies that the above problem admits a unique solution $w \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}_1)$ because of [42], Theorem 6.8, p. 100 (see also [49], Theorem 1.3, p. 107). Since $u_{\rm N}^0|_{\overline{\Omega}_1}$ also solves (5.3), then by uniqueness, we have $w \equiv u_{\rm N}^0|_{\overline{\Omega}_1}$.

Let us next consider the following boundary value problem:

$$\Delta v - v = -u_{\rm N}^0 \quad \text{in } \Omega_2, \qquad \frac{\partial v}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} = g_0 \quad \text{on } \Sigma, \qquad \frac{\partial v}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} = \frac{\partial u_{\rm N}^0}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} \quad \text{on } S.$$
 (5.4)

Since $u_{\mathrm{N}}^{0} \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}_{2})$, $\nabla u_{\mathrm{N}}^{0} \cdot \nu \in C^{1+\alpha}(S)$, and $g_{0} \in C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma)$, then by [54], Theorem 5.2, we see that (5.4) admits a unique solution $v \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}_{2})$. Because $u_{\mathrm{N}}^{0}\big|_{\overline{\Omega}_{2}}$ also solves (5.4), uniqueness then implies that $v \equiv u_{\mathrm{N}}^{0}\big|_{\overline{\Omega}_{2}}$. This concludes that Equation (5.2) admits a unique solution in $C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})$.

Let $U_{\rm D}^0:=U_{\rm D}^0(y,t),\ y\in\Omega,\ t>0$, and $f(\cdot,t)\in C^{2+\alpha}(\Sigma)$, for all $t\geqslant0$. Then, it can be checked that the boundary value problem

$$\Delta U_{\rm D}^0 = 0, \quad y \in \Omega, \qquad U_{\rm D}^0 \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = f(y, t), \qquad U_{\rm D}^0 \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0,$$
 (5.5)

admits a unique solution $U_{\rm D}^0 \in C^0([0,T];C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))$, for all $t \ge 0$, where t is a parameter appearing in the boundary condition on Σ . The solution to (5.5) satisfies the inequality condition

$$\max_{0 \le \tau \le t} |U_{\mathcal{D}}^{0}(\cdot, \tau)|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} \le c(d, \Omega, \alpha) \max_{0 \le \tau \le t} |f(\cdot, \tau)|_{\Sigma}^{(2+\alpha)}, \tag{5.6}$$

Similarly, for $U_N^0 := U_N^0(y,t), y \in \Omega, t > 0$, and $g(\cdot,t) \in C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma)$ for all $t \ge 0$, the boundary value problem

$$\Delta U_{\rm N}^0 = 0, \quad y \in \Omega, \qquad \frac{\partial U_{\rm N}^0}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = g(y, t), \qquad U_{\rm N}^0 \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0,$$
 (5.7)

admits a unique solution $U_N^0 \in C^0([0,T];C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))$. Again, t is a parameter appearing in the boundary condition on Σ .

Next, we want to prove an estimate for $|U_N^0| \overline{\Omega}^{(2+\alpha)}$ in terms of $|g| \Sigma^{(1+\alpha)}$. More precisely, we aim to establish the validity of the following proposition.

Proposition 5.4. Let $\alpha \in (0,1)$ and $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ be an open, bounded, and connected set with $C^{2+\alpha}$ regularity and $g \in C^0([0,T];C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma))$ be given. If $U_N^0 \in C^0([0,T];C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))$ is a solution to (5.7), then we have the following estimate

$$\max_{0 \leqslant \tau \leqslant t} |U_N^0(\cdot, \tau)|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c(d, \Omega, \alpha) \max_{0 \leqslant \tau \leqslant t} |g(\cdot, \tau)|_{\Sigma}^{(1+\alpha)}, \tag{5.8}$$

where $c(d,\Omega,\alpha)>0$ is a constant that depends only on the dimension d, the set Ω , and the number $\alpha\in(0,1)$.

Proof. Let $g \in C^0([0,T];C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma))$, for some $\alpha \in (0,1)$, $t \in [0,T]$, and $\tau < t$ be fixed. Note that it is enough to prove that $|U_N^0|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c |g|_{\Sigma}^{(1+\alpha)}$, for some constant c > 0. In the proof, we abuse some notations (i.e., we write φ instead of $\varphi(\xi,\tau) =: \varphi(\xi)$ as τ is fixed for the functions involved here) and assume that $U_N^0 \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})$ is a solution to (5.7). We consider a cutoff function $\phi \in C^{\infty}(\mathbb{R}^d)$ such that $\phi = 1$ near Σ and $\phi = 0$ near Γ . Next, we define the functions $v_N := \phi U_N^0$ and $v_D := (1 - \phi)U_N^0$ such that

$$\Delta v_{\rm N} = h_{\phi} \quad \text{in } \Omega, \qquad \qquad \frac{\partial v_{\rm N}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}} = g \quad \text{on } \in \Sigma, \qquad \qquad \frac{\partial v_{\rm N}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}} = 0 \quad \text{on } \Gamma;$$

$$\Delta v_{\rm D} = -h_{\phi} \quad \text{in } \Omega, \qquad \qquad v_{\rm D} = 0 \quad \text{on } \in \Sigma, \qquad \qquad v_{\rm D} = 0 \quad \text{on } \Gamma,$$

where $h_{\phi} := (\Delta \phi)U_{\rm N}^0 + \nabla \phi \cdot \nabla U_{\rm N}^0$. By these constructions, notice that $U_{\rm N}^0 = v_{\rm N} + v_{\rm D}$. Now, by [42], Theorem 6.30, equation (6.77), p. 127, we immediately get the following estimates

$$\begin{aligned} &|v_{\mathrm{N}}|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c_{0\mathrm{N}}(d,\Omega,\alpha) \left(|v_{\mathrm{N}}|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)} + |g|_{\Sigma}^{(1+\alpha)} + |h_{\phi}|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0+\alpha)} \right) \leqslant c_{1\mathrm{N}}(d,\Omega,\alpha) \left(|g|_{\Sigma}^{(1+\alpha)} + |U_{\mathrm{N}}^{0}|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(1+\alpha)} \right), \\ &|v_{\mathrm{D}}|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c_{0\mathrm{D}}(d,\Omega,\alpha) \left| h_{\phi}|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0+\alpha)} \leqslant c_{1\mathrm{D}}(d,\Omega,\alpha) \left| U_{\mathrm{N}}^{0}|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0+\alpha)} \right., \end{aligned}$$

where c_{0N} , c_{1N} , c_{0D} , $c_{1D} > 0$. These inequalities clearly implies that

$$\left| U_{\mathbf{N}}^{0} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c_{0}(d, \Omega, \alpha) \left(\left| U_{\mathbf{N}}^{0} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(1+\alpha)} + \left| g \right|_{\Sigma}^{(1+\alpha)} \right).$$

The quantity $|U_N^0|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(1+\alpha)}$ can be estimated as follows (see, e.g., [42], Lem. 6.35, p. 135):

$$|U_{N}^{0}|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(1+\alpha)} \leq c_{1}(\varepsilon,\Omega) |U_{N}^{0}|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)} + \varepsilon |U_{N}^{0}|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)},$$

for some constant $c_1(\varepsilon,\Omega) > 0$. Using the above interpolation inequality, we get

$$\left| U_{\mathcal{N}}^{0} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c_{2}(n, \Omega, \alpha, \varepsilon) \left(\left| U_{\mathcal{N}}^{0} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)} + \left| g \right|_{\Sigma}^{(1+\alpha)} \right), \tag{5.9}$$

for some constant $c_2(n, \Omega, \alpha, \varepsilon) > 0$, and we want to prove that we actually have (5.8). To do this, we mimic an argument in showing inequalities between two equivalent norms which is also similar to a proof of Poincaré's inequality via a contradiction (see, e.g., [45], Proof of Theorem 1, pp. 275–276 or [55], Lem. 49.30, p. 1037). Analogous proof can also be found in [56], Proof of Theorem 3.28, pp. 194–195.

The argument to prove (5.8) will proceed by contradiction. So, let us suppose that inequality (5.8) does not hold. This means that we can find a sequence $\{U_{Nk}^0\}_{k\in\mathbb{N}}\subset C^{2+\alpha}(\Omega)$ and $\{g_k\}\subset C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma)$ such that

$$\Delta U_{\mathrm{N}k}^{0} = 0 \quad \text{in } \Omega, \qquad \frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{N}k}^{0}}{\partial \nu_{\mathrm{o}}} = g_{k} \quad \text{on } \in \Sigma, \qquad U_{\mathrm{N}k}^{0} = 0 \quad \text{on } \Gamma,$$

and, for each $k \in \mathbb{N}$, U_{Nk}^0 satisfies

$$|U_{\mathrm{N}k}^{0}|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} = 1$$
 and $|U_{\mathrm{N}k}^{0}|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} \geqslant k |g_{k}|_{\Sigma}^{(1+\alpha)}$.

Letting $k \to \infty$, we get $g_k \to 0$ in $C^{1+\alpha}(\Sigma)$ because $\frac{1}{k} \left| U^0_{\mathrm{N}k} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} \to 0$. By the first condition above, we see that for every multi-index β , with $|\beta| = 0, 1, 2$, the sequence $\{D^\beta U^0_{\mathrm{N}k}\}$ is uniformly bounded in $C^0(\overline{\Omega})$. Consequently, the sequence is equicontinuous because the inequality

$$|D^{\beta}U_{Nk}^{0}(\xi_{1}) - D^{\beta}U_{Nk}^{0}(\xi_{2})| \le |\xi_{1} - \xi_{2}|^{\alpha}, \quad \text{for all } \xi_{1}, \xi_{2} \in \Omega, \text{ and all } |\beta| = 2,$$

actually implies that

$$|D^{\beta}U_{Nk}^{0}(\xi_{1}) - D^{\beta}U_{Nk}^{0}(\xi_{2})| \le m_{0}|\xi_{1} - \xi_{2}|^{\alpha}$$
, for all $\xi_{1}, \xi_{2} \in \Omega$, and all $|\beta| = 0, 1$,

for some constant $m_0 = m_0(\Omega) > 0$, according to [53], Proposition 1.5.2, p. 34; Theorem 4.4.1, p. 109; or Theorem 4.4.2, p. 120. By iteratively applying the Arzelà-Ascoli Theorem (see, e.g., [45], Sect. C.7, pp. 634–635 or [57], Thm. 2.86, p. 48), we obtain a subsequence (which we denote with the same notation) such that

$$U_{\mathrm{N}k}^0 \to U_{\mathrm{N}}^0$$
 in $C^0(\overline{\Omega})$, and $D^{\beta}U_{\mathrm{N}k}^0 \to D^{\beta}U_{\mathrm{N}}^0$ in $C^0(\overline{\Omega})$, for all $|\beta| = 1, 2$,

which implies that $U_{Nk}^0 \to U_N^0$ in $C^2(\overline{\Omega})$. Consequently, we arrive at the following limits

$$\Delta U_{\rm N}^0 = \lim_{k \to \infty} \Delta U_{{\rm N}k}^0 = 0, \qquad \frac{\partial}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} U_{\rm N}^0 = \lim_{k \to \infty} \frac{\partial}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} U_{{\rm N}k}^0 = \lim_{k \to \infty} g_k = 0,$$

from which we obtain

$$\Delta U_{\rm N}^0 = 0 \quad \text{in } \Omega, \qquad \frac{\partial U_{\rm N}^0}{\partial \nu_{\diamond}} = 0 \quad \text{on } \in \Sigma, \qquad U_{\rm N}^0 = 0 \quad \text{on } \Gamma.$$

This implies that $U_N^0 \equiv 0$. Comparing this with the first estimate (8.10) yields a contradiction because the subsequence $\{U_{Nk}^0\}_{k\in\mathbb{N}}$ satisfies

$$1 = \left| U_{\mathrm{N}k}^{0} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c_{0}(d,\Omega,\alpha) \left[\left| U_{\mathrm{N}k}^{0} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)} + \left| g_{k} \right|_{\Sigma}^{(1+\alpha)} \right] \longrightarrow 0.$$

Thus, inequality (5.8) holds true. Taking the supremum of $\tau < t \in [0,T]$ yields the desired estimate.

6. The nonlinear problem

In this section, we distinguish the linear part of the main and dynamic boundary conditions of the nonlinear problem (6.1). To do this, we compute the variations of the operators given in (4.9) with respect to $\tilde{\rho}$. We introduce the new unknown functions

$$V_{\rm D} = U_{\rm D} - U_{\rm D}^0$$
 and $V_{\rm N} = U_{\rm N} - U_{\rm N}^0$.

Hence, using the equations in (4.10), we may write (4.7) in the following form

$$\begin{cases}
\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}V_{\mathrm{D}} + (\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \Delta)U_{\mathrm{D}}^{0} + (\mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}V_{\mathrm{D}} + \mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}U_{\mathrm{D}}^{0})\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}\tilde{\rho} + (\mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}}V_{\mathrm{D}} + \mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}}U_{\mathrm{D}}^{0}) = 0, \quad y \in \Omega, \quad t > 0, \\
V_{\mathrm{D}}|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, \quad V_{\mathrm{D}}|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}V_{\mathrm{N}} + (\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \Delta)U_{\mathrm{N}}^{0} + (\mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}V_{\mathrm{N}} + \mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}U_{\mathrm{N}}^{0})\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}\tilde{\rho} + (\mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}}V_{\mathrm{N}} + \mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}}U_{\mathrm{N}}^{0}) = 0, \quad y \in \Omega, \quad t > 0, \\
\frac{\partial V_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}}\Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, \quad V_{\mathrm{N}}|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\left(\frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial t} + B_{\tilde{\rho}}\frac{\partial V_{\mathrm{DN}}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}} + B_{\tilde{\rho}}\frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{DN}}^{0}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}}\right)\Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\tilde{\rho}\Big|_{y \in \Gamma, t = 0} = 0,
\end{cases} (6.1)$$

where $\tilde{\rho} = \tilde{\rho}(y,t) = E\rho(y,t)$, E being the operator (4.3), satisfies (4.4).

In order to identify the linear part of the main equations and of the dynamic boundary condition in (6.1), we introduce the variation

$$\delta \mathcal{F}_0 = \left. \frac{d}{d\lambda} \mathcal{F}_{\lambda \tilde{\rho}} \right|_{\lambda = 0},$$

of the operator $\mathcal{F} \in \{\mathcal{L}, \mathcal{K}, \mathcal{M}\}$ which depends on $\tilde{\rho}$. Note that the map $[\tilde{\rho} \mapsto \mathcal{F}_{\tilde{\rho}}]$, where $\mathcal{F}_{\tilde{\rho}} \in \{\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}, \mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}, \mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}}\}$, are analytic; see (4.11). Also, we note of the following identities:

$$\mathcal{L}_0 V_i = \Delta V_i, \qquad \mathcal{M}_0 V_i = 0, \qquad \mathcal{K}_0 V_i = \mathbf{N} \cdot \nabla V_i, \qquad B_0 = \frac{1}{\mathbf{N} \cdot \nu_0}, \qquad i = \mathrm{D, N}.$$

Because $\mathcal{M}_0 \equiv 0$ and $\mathcal{L}_0 \tilde{\rho} \equiv 0$, then for i = D, N, we can write the main equations in (6.1) posed over Ω in the following way:

$$\begin{split} \mathcal{L}_{0}V_{i} + \delta\mathcal{L}_{0}U_{i} + \delta\mathcal{M}_{0}U_{i} + \mathcal{K}_{0}U_{i}\mathcal{L}_{0}\tilde{\rho} \\ &= -(\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \mathcal{L}_{0})V_{i} - (\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \mathcal{L}_{0} - \delta\mathcal{L}_{0})U_{i} \\ &- (\mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \mathcal{M}_{0})V_{i} - (\mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \mathcal{M}_{0} - \delta\mathcal{M}_{0})U_{i}, \\ &- (\mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}V_{i} + \mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}U_{i})(\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}\tilde{\rho} - \mathcal{L}_{0}\tilde{\rho}) \\ &=: \mathcal{N}[V_{i}, \tilde{\rho}]. \end{split}$$

On the other hand, the dynamic boundary condition on Γ in (6.1) can be written as follows:

$$\frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial t} + B_0 \frac{\partial V_{\rm DN}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}} + \delta B_0 \frac{\partial U_{\rm DN}^0}{\partial \nu_{\circ}} \Big|_{\Gamma}$$

$$= -\left[(B_{\tilde{\rho}} - B_0 - \delta B_0) \frac{\partial U_{\rm DN}^0}{\partial \nu_{\circ}} + (B_{\tilde{\rho}} - B_0) \frac{\partial V_{\rm DN}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}} + B_0 \frac{\partial U_{\rm DN}^0}{\partial \nu_{\circ}} \right]$$

$$=: \mathcal{B}[V_{\rm D}, V_{\rm N}, \tilde{\rho}] - B_0 \frac{\partial U_{\rm DN}^0}{\partial \nu_{\circ}}.$$
(6.2)

The computations of the variations $\delta \mathcal{L}_0$, $\delta \mathcal{K}_0$, $\delta \mathcal{M}_0$, and $\delta \mathcal{B}_0$, which consists of the variations of δB_0 and/or $\delta A^{(0)}$, can be done without difficulty (see Appendix D). In fact, it can be checked, for instance, that

$$\delta \mathcal{L}_0 U_i = \sum_{m,p=1}^d \delta \mathsf{A}_{mp}^{(0)} \frac{\partial^2 U_i}{\partial y_m \partial y_p}, \qquad (i = \mathrm{D}, \mathrm{N}), \qquad \delta \mathsf{A}_{mp}^{(0)} = -\sum_{m=1}^d \left(\frac{\partial (N_m \tilde{\rho})}{\partial y_p} + \frac{\partial (N_p \tilde{\rho})}{\partial y_m} \right),$$
$$\delta B_0 = -2\nu_\circ \cdot \nabla \tilde{\rho} - \frac{\mathbf{N} \cdot \nabla \tilde{\rho}}{\mathbf{N} \cdot \nu_\circ} + h(\mathbf{N}, \partial_y \mathbf{N}) \tilde{\rho},$$

where

$$h(\mathbf{N}, \partial_y \mathbf{N}) := -\frac{2\nu_{\circ} \cdot (\nabla \otimes \mathbf{N})^{\top} \nu_{\circ}}{\mathbf{N} \cdot \nu_{\circ}} + \frac{1}{(\mathbf{N} \cdot \nu_{\circ})^2} \left(\nu_{\circ} \cdot (\nabla \otimes \mathbf{N})^{\top} \mathbf{N}\right).$$

Note that δB_0 is well-defined because of Assumption (A2).

Observe from the above expressions that the variations $\delta \mathcal{L}_0$ and δB_0 only consist of first-order derivatives of $\tilde{\rho}$. Because $\tilde{\rho}$ is satisfies the Laplace equation (4.4), the linear part of the first and fourth equation in problem (6.1) do not contain the second-order partial derivatives of the function $\tilde{\rho}$. Therefore, we are able to reduce the problem as follows:

$$\begin{cases}
\Delta V_{\rm D} + \mathbf{q}_{\rm D} \cdot \nabla \tilde{\rho} + Q_{\rm D} \tilde{\rho} = \mathcal{N}[V_{\rm D}, \tilde{\rho}], & y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \\
V_{\rm D}|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, & V_{\rm D}|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\Delta V_{\rm N} + \mathbf{q}_{\rm N} \cdot \nabla \tilde{\rho} + Q_{\rm N} \tilde{\rho} = \mathcal{N}[V_{\rm N}, \tilde{\rho}], & y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \\
\frac{\partial V_{\rm N}}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, & V_{\rm N}|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\left(\frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial t} + b_{\perp} \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} + \mathbf{b}_{\parallel} \cdot \nabla_{\Gamma} \tilde{\rho} + h \tilde{\rho} + B_{0} \frac{\partial V_{\rm DN}}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}}\right)\Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = \mathcal{B}[V_{\rm D}, V_{\rm N}, \tilde{\rho}] - B_{0} \frac{\partial U_{\rm DN}^{0}}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}}, \\
\tilde{\rho}|_{y \in \Gamma, t = 0} = 0,
\end{cases} (6.3)$$

where $h := h(\mathbf{N}, \partial_y \mathbf{N})$. Here, \mathcal{B} and \mathcal{N} are the nonlinear terms. The functions \mathbf{q}_D and Q_D depend on U_D^0 , \mathbf{N} , and their derivatives, while the functions \mathbf{q}_N and Q_N depend on U_N^0 , \mathbf{N} , and their derivatives. The functions b_{\perp} and \mathbf{b}_{\parallel} depend on \mathbf{N} and its derivatives.

At this point, it is important to know the sign of the coefficient b_{\perp} of $\frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}}$ appearing in the boundary equation on Γ (cf. (6.2)). By examining the explicit form of δB_0 , (A2), and (A3), we deduce that $b_{\perp} < 0$.

7. The Linear Problem

Our goal here is to prove the existence of classical solution to a linear problem corresponding to (6.3). That is, we study the following system of partial differential equations:

$$\begin{aligned}
\Delta w_{\rm D} + \mathbf{q}_{\rm D} \cdot \nabla \theta + Q_{\rm D} \theta &= F_{\rm D}(y, t), & y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \\
w_{\rm D}|_{y \in \Sigma} &= 0, & w_{\rm D}|_{y \in \Gamma} &= 0, \\
\Delta w_{\rm N} + \mathbf{q}_{\rm N} \cdot \nabla \theta + Q_{\rm N} \theta &= F_{\rm N}(y, t), & y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \\
\frac{\partial w_{\rm N}}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} &= 0, & w_{\rm N}|_{y \in \Gamma} &= 0, \\
\left(\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial t} + b_{\perp} \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} + \mathbf{b}_{\parallel} \cdot \nabla_{\Gamma} \theta + h \theta + B_{0} \frac{\partial w_{\rm DN}}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}}\right)\Big|_{y \in \Gamma} &= \psi(y, t), \\
\theta|_{y \in \Gamma, t = 0} &= 0,
\end{aligned} \tag{7.1}$$

where $\theta = \theta(y, t)$, for t > 0, is harmonic in $y \in \Omega$ and vanishes on Σ (i.e., $\theta|_{\Sigma} = 0$).

In connection with the above problem, we will prove the following result under the essential condition $b_{\perp} < 0$ (cf. [58], Eq. (3.4)). If this condition is violated, the moving boundary problem (1.1) may become ill-posed; that is, it may fail to admit a classical solution; cf. [43], Theorem 2.1 for a related issue in Hele–Shaw flows (see also [59] and [16], Rem. 5.3).

Theorem 7.1. Let $\Sigma, \Gamma \in C^{2+\alpha}$ for some $\alpha \in (0,1)$, and suppose that the coefficients in (7.1) satisfy the following conditions

$$\begin{cases} b_{\perp}, \ h \in C^{0}([0,T];C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma)), \\ \mathbf{b}_{\parallel} \in C^{0}([0,T];C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma)^{d}), \\ Q_{D}, \ Q_{N} \in C^{0}([0,T];C^{0+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})), \\ \mathbf{q}_{D}, \ \mathbf{q}_{N} \in C^{0}([0,T];C^{0+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})^{d}), \\ b_{\perp} < 0. \end{cases}$$

For any $F_D, F_N \in C^0([0,T]; C^{0+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))$ and $\psi \in C^0([0,T]; C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma))$, system (7.1) has a unique solution

$$w_D, \ w_N, \ \theta \in C^0([0,T]; C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))$$

with θ having additional smoothness with respect to t on the surface Γ . That is, $\theta_t \in C^0([0,T];C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma))$. In addition, the following estimate hold:

$$||w_{D,N}||_{\overline{\Omega};[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + ||\theta||_{\overline{\Omega};[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \le c \left(||F_{D,N}||_{\overline{\Omega};[0,t]}^{(\alpha)} + |\psi|_{\Gamma;[0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} \right), \tag{7.2}$$

for some constant c > 0.

To solve system (7.1), we will apply the method of successive approximations (see, e.g., [42], p. 74 or [67], Sect. 1.1.1, p. 124). At each step, three problems are solved: the first two are elliptic equations whose coefficients and unknown functions depend on time like a parameter (this corresponds to the pure Dirichlet problem and mixed Dirichlet-Neumann problem in (7.1)), and the problem for an elliptic equation with the time-derivative in the boundary condition (this corresponds to the last two equations in (7.1)). In the next several lines, we focus on the existence of solution to the last mentioned problem.

Let $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ be an open, bounded, connected set with boundary $\partial \Omega = \Gamma \cup \Sigma$, where $\Gamma, \Sigma \in C^{2+\alpha}$ are disjoint surfaces, and Γ is interior to Σ . Let us consider and examine the following system:

$$\begin{cases}
-\Delta\Theta = 0, \quad y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, & \Theta|_{y \in \Sigma} = \psi_2, & \Theta|_{y \in \Gamma, t = 0} = 0, \\
\left(\frac{\partial\Theta}{\partial t} + \mathbf{b} \cdot \nabla\Theta + \kappa\Theta\right)\Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = \psi_1.
\end{cases} (7.3)$$

Lemma 7.2. Let the coefficients in (7.3) satisfy the following conditions

$$b_i \ (i = 1, ..., d), \ \kappa \in C^0([0, T]; C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma)), \quad \mathbf{b} \cdot \nu < -b_0 < 0, \quad (\mathbf{b} = (b_1, ..., b_d)^\top),$$

for some constant $b_0 > 0$. For any given boundary data

$$\psi_1 \in C^0([0,T]; C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma))$$
 and $\psi_2 \in C^0([0,T]; C^{2+\alpha}(\Sigma)),$

there exists a unique solution $\Theta \in C^0([0,T];C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega}))$ to problem (7.3), and such that the following estimate hold

$$\|\Theta\|_{\overline{\Omega}, \Gamma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \le c \left(|\psi_1|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} + |\psi_2|_{\Sigma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \right), \qquad t \le T,$$
(7.4)

where the constant c > 0 depends on the coefficients in the boundary condition.

We are now in the position to prove Theorem 7.1.

Proof of Theorem 7.1. We first confirm estimate (7.2). To this end, we write the main equations in (7.1) in the form

$$\begin{cases}
\Delta w_{\rm D} = H_{\rm D} \equiv F_{\rm D} - \mathbf{q}_{\rm D} \cdot \nabla \theta - Q_{\rm D} \theta, \\
\Delta w_{\rm N} = H_{\rm N} \equiv F_{\rm N} - \mathbf{q}_{\rm N} \cdot \nabla \theta - Q_{\rm N} \theta.
\end{cases}$$
(7.5)

We consider the Poisson equation above with the homogeneous Dirichlet condition on the whole boundary $\partial\Omega$. According to a classical result concerning the pure Dirichlet problem (cf. [49], Eq. (1.11), p. 110), the following estimate holds: $|w_{\rm D}|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \leq c \left(|H_{\rm D}|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(\alpha)} + \max_{\overline{\Omega}} |w_{\rm D}|\right)$, for some constant c > 0. We can disregard the term $\max_{\overline{\Omega}} |w_{\rm D}|$ because, as we will verify later in the proof, the Poisson problem has a unique solution (cf. [49], p. 110). Hence, we get the bound

$$|w_{\mathcal{D}}|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c_{\mathcal{D}} \left(|\theta|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} + |\theta|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(\alpha)} + |F_{\mathcal{D}}|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(\alpha)} \right), \tag{7.6}$$

where $c_{\rm D} > 0$ is a constant that depends only on $Q_{\rm D}$ and $\mathbf{q}_{\rm D}$.

For the second equation in (7.5), we consider the boundary problem for the Poisson equation with homogenous Neumann condition on Σ and a homogenous Dirichlet condition on Γ . Using the result from [56], Theorem 3.28(ii), p. 194, we have the estimate

$$|w_{\mathcal{N}}|_{\overline{\Omega};[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c |H_{\mathcal{N}}|_{\overline{\Omega};[0,t]}^{(\alpha)} \leqslant c_{\mathcal{N}} \left(|\theta|_{\overline{\Omega};[0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} + |\theta|_{\overline{\Omega};[0,t]}^{(\alpha)} + |F_{\mathcal{N}}|_{\overline{\Omega};[0,t]}^{(\alpha)} \right), \tag{7.7}$$

for some constant $c, c_{\rm N} > 0$ that depends only on $Q_{\rm N}$ and $\mathbf{q}_{\rm N}$.

Next, we consider the last two equations in system (7.1) and apply estimate (7.4) with

$$\psi_1 = \psi - B_0 \frac{\partial w_{\rm DN}}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}}$$

to obtain

$$\|\|\theta\|\|_{\overline{\Omega}, \Gamma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \le c |\psi_1|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} \le c \left(|\psi|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} + \|w_{\mathrm{D,N}}\|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \right),$$

for some constant c > 0. Combining this estimate with (7.6) and (7.7), we get a new estimate

$$\|\|\theta\|_{\overline{\Omega},\,\Gamma;\,[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)}\leqslant c\left(|\psi|_{\Gamma;\,[0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)}+|\theta|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)}+|\theta|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(\alpha)}+\|F_{\mathrm{D},\mathrm{N}}\|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(\alpha)}\right).$$

It only remains to estimate the sum $|\theta|_{\overline{\Omega};[0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} + |\theta|_{\overline{\Omega};[0,t]}^{(\alpha)}$. To get rid of these terms on the right hand side of the above inequality, we simply apply the same argument used in the latter part of the proof of Lemma 7.2. That is, we utilize the interpolation inequalities (E.4), apply the maximum principle (since θ is harmonic), and then use Grönwall lemma, noting that $\theta(y,t)=0$ for $y\in\Gamma$ at t=0, to eventually get the desired estimate (7.2). This ends the verification of estimate (7.2).

We next establish the solvability of system (7.1). Our approach is to apply the method of successive approximation (see, e.g., [60]). To this end, the initial approximation $(w_D^{(0)}, w_N^{(0)}, \theta^{(0)})$ is found by solving the problem

$$\mathscr{Q}(w_{\rm D}^{(0)}, w_{\rm N}^{(0)}, \theta^{(0)})(y, t) = (F_{\rm D}, F_{\rm N})(y, t), \qquad y \in \overline{\Omega}, \quad t > 0, \tag{7.8}$$

where, for n = 0, 1, 2, ...,

$$\mathscr{Q}(w_{\mathrm{D}}^{(n)}, w_{\mathrm{N}}^{(n)}, \theta^{(n)})(y, t) = (\Psi_{\mathrm{D}}, \Psi_{\mathrm{N}})(y, t), \qquad y \in \overline{\Omega}, \quad t > 0,$$

$$\begin{cases}
\Delta w_{\mathrm{D}}^{(n)} = \Psi_{\mathrm{D}}(y,t), & y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, & w_{\mathrm{D}}^{(n)} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, & w_{\mathrm{D}}^{(n)} \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\Delta w_{\mathrm{N}}^{(n)} = \Psi_{\mathrm{N}}(y,t), & y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, & \frac{\partial w_{\mathrm{N}}^{(n)}}{\partial \nu_{\mathrm{o}}} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, & w_{\mathrm{N}}^{(n)} \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\Delta \theta^{(n)} = 0, & y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, & \theta^{(n)} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, & \theta^{(n)} \Big|_{y \in \Gamma, \ t = 0} = 0, \\
\left(\frac{\partial \theta^{(n)}}{\partial t} + b_{\perp} \frac{\partial \theta^{(n)}}{\partial \nu_{\mathrm{o}}} + \mathbf{b}_{\parallel} \cdot \nabla_{\Gamma} \theta^{(n)} + h \theta^{(n)}\right) \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = \psi(y, t) - B_{0} \frac{\partial w_{\mathrm{DN}}^{(n)}}{\partial \nu_{\mathrm{o}}},
\end{cases} (7.9)$$

for $n=0,1,\ldots$, where $(w_{\rm D}^{(n)},w_{\rm N}^{(n)},\theta^{(n)})$ are the unknown triplet, and $(\Psi_{\rm D},\Psi_{\rm N})$ are a pair of given functions. Then, we define the approximants $(w_{\rm D}^{(m+1)},w_{\rm N}^{(m+1)},\theta^{(m+1)})$, for $m=0,1,\ldots$, as solution to (7.9) with n=m+1; that is, $(w_{\rm D}^{(m+1)},w_{\rm N}^{(m+1)},\theta^{(m+1)})$ solves the equation

$$\mathscr{Q}(w_{\mathrm{D}}^{(m+1)}, w_{\mathrm{N}}^{(m+1)}, \theta^{(m+1)})(y, t) = (H_{\mathrm{D}}^{(m)}, H_{\mathrm{N}}^{(m)})(y, t), \qquad y \in \overline{\Omega}, \quad t > 0,$$
(7.10)

where

$$H_i^{(m+1)} \equiv F_i - \mathbf{q}_i \cdot \nabla \theta^{(m)} - Q_i \theta^{(m)}, \qquad i = D, N.$$

The solvability of the Poisson problem with pure Dirichlet boundary condition is well-known (see, e.g., [42], Thm. 4.3, p. 56)⁵. Meanwhile, because $w_N^{(m+1)}(y,t)$ vanishes for $y \in \Gamma$, t > 0, for all m = 0, 1, ..., then the Poisson problem with mixed Dirichlet-Neumann boundary condition is also guaranteed to be solvable (see [56], Chap. 3). Together with Theorem 7.1 and Lemma 7.2, these allow us to infer the unique solvability of (7.10) for all $t \in [0,T]$ and for all $m=0,1,\ldots$ In addition, the solutions satisfy the following estimates⁶

$$\left| w_i^{(m+1)} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c_i^m \left(|F_i|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(\alpha)} + \left| \theta^{(m)} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} + \left| \theta^{(m)} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(\alpha)} \right), \qquad i = D, N,$$

$$\left\| \left| \theta^{(m+1)} \right| \right\|_{\overline{\Omega}, \Gamma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c \left(|\psi|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} + \left\| w_{D,N}^{(m+1)} \right\|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \right),$$

for some constants $c_i^m := c_{\mathcal{D}}^m(Q_i, \mathbf{q}_i) > 0, \, i = \mathcal{D}, \mathcal{N}, \, \text{and} \, \, c > 0.$

We first estimate the term $|\theta^{(m)}|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(\alpha)}$ via the interpolation inequality

$$[\theta^{(m)}]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(\alpha)} \leqslant \varepsilon_{4,m} \left| \theta^{(m)} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(1)} + c_{\varepsilon_{4,m}} \left| \theta^{(m)} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)},$$

and choose $\varepsilon_{4,m} > 0$ small enough so that we can bound the terms above only by $\max_{\overline{O}} |\theta^{(m)}|$. Then, we argue as in the latter part of the proof of Lemma 7.2, to write the estimates above as follows:

$$\begin{split} \left|w_i^{(m+1)}\right|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} &\leqslant \tilde{c}_i^m \left(|F_i|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(\alpha)} + \left|\theta^{(m)}\right|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)}\right), \qquad i = \mathrm{D,N}, \\ \left|\left\|\theta^{(m+1)}\right\|\right\|_{\overline{\Omega},\,\Gamma;\,[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} &\leqslant \tilde{c} \left(K(t) + \left|\theta^{(m)}\right|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)}\right), \end{split}$$

for some constants $\tilde{c}_i^m:=\tilde{c}_i^m(Q_i,\mathbf{q}_i)>0,\,i=\mathrm{D},\mathrm{N},$ and $\tilde{c}>0,$ where

$$K(t) := \|F_{D,N}\|_{\overline{\Omega} \cdot [0,t]}^{(\alpha)} + |\psi|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)}.$$

Moreover, the initial approximant $(w_{\rm D}^{(0)}, w_{\rm N}^{(0)}, \theta^{(0)})$ satisfies the estimate

$$\left\| w_{\mathrm{D,N}}^{(0)} \right\|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + \left\| \theta^{(0)} \right\|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c_0 K(t), \tag{7.11}$$

for some constant $c_0 > 0$.

Let us consider the differences

$$\varpi_i^{(m+1)} = w_i^{(m+1)} - w_i^{(m)}, \quad i = D, N, \quad \text{and} \quad \vartheta^{(m+1)} = \theta^{(m+1)} - \theta^{(m)},$$

⁵Because Ω is bounded, its closure is compact.

⁶Note here that $|\Theta^{(m)}|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(\alpha)} = \max_{\overline{\Omega}} |\Theta^{(m)}| + [\Theta^{(m)}]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(\alpha)}$.

where $m = 0, 1, \ldots$ Clearly, for $m = 0, 1, \ldots, (\varpi_D^{(m+1)}, \varpi_N^{(m+1)}, \vartheta^{(m+1)})$ satisfies

$$\begin{cases}
\Delta \varpi_{\mathcal{D}}^{(m+1)} = -\mathbf{q}_{\mathcal{D}} \cdot \nabla \vartheta^{(m)} - Q_{\mathcal{D}} \vartheta^{(m)}, & y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \quad \varpi_{\mathcal{D}}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, \quad \varpi_{\mathcal{D}}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\Delta \varpi_{\mathcal{N}}^{(m+1)} = -\mathbf{q}_{\mathcal{N}} \cdot \nabla \vartheta^{(m)} - Q_{\mathcal{N}} \vartheta^{(m)}, & y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \quad \frac{\partial \varpi_{\mathcal{N}}^{(m+1)}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, \quad \varpi_{\mathcal{N}}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\Delta \vartheta^{(m+1)} = 0, \quad y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \quad \vartheta^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, \quad \vartheta^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Gamma, t = 0} = 0, \\
\begin{pmatrix} \frac{\partial \vartheta^{(m+1)}}{\partial t} + b_{\perp} \frac{\partial \vartheta^{(m+1)}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}} + \mathbf{b}_{\parallel} \cdot \nabla_{\Gamma} \vartheta^{(m+1)} + h \vartheta^{(m+1)} \end{pmatrix} \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = -B_0 \frac{\partial \varpi_{\mathcal{D}\mathcal{N}}^{(m+1)}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}}.
\end{cases} (7.12)$$

Following the previous estimations, it can be deduced that $(\varpi_{\mathbf{D}}^{(m+1)}, \varpi_{\mathbf{N}}^{(m+1)}, \vartheta^{(m+1)})$ satisfy the estimates

$$\left\| \varpi_{\mathrm{D,N}}^{(m+1)} \right\|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + \left\| \vartheta^{(m+1)} \right\|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant c \left| \vartheta^{(m)} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)}, \tag{7.13}$$

for some constants c > 0.

We estimate in the next few lines the right hand side of (7.13). For this purpose, we use the following property of norms on $C^{k+\alpha}$ (see, e.g., [49], Eq. (5.7), p. 403):

$$|u|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(k-1+\alpha)}\leqslant \varepsilon_6\,|u|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(k+\alpha)}+c_{\varepsilon_6}\underset{\overline{\Omega}}{\max}\,|u|\,,\quad (k\geqslant 2).$$

Here, $\varepsilon_6 > 0$ is an arbitrary small number and $c_{\varepsilon_6} \to \infty$ as $\varepsilon_6 \to 0$. This, together with the fact that $\vartheta^{(m)}(y,0) =$ 0, for $y \in \Gamma$, for each m = 0, 1, ..., leads us to the following estimate

$$\left| \vartheta^{(m)} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(1+\alpha)} \leq \left(\varepsilon_{6} \left| \vartheta^{(m)} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + c_{\varepsilon_{6}} \max_{\overline{\Omega}} \left| \vartheta^{(m)} \right| \right)$$

$$\leq \varepsilon_{6} \left| \vartheta^{(m)} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + c_{\varepsilon_{6}} \int_{0}^{t} \max_{\Gamma} \left| \frac{\partial}{\partial s} \vartheta^{(m)} (\cdot, s) \right| ds.$$

$$(7.14)$$

For m=0, it is easy to see that

$$\Delta\varpi_{\mathrm{D}}^{(1)} = -\mathbf{q}_{\mathrm{D}}\cdot\nabla\theta^{(0)} - Q_{\mathrm{D}}\theta^{(0)} \qquad \text{and} \qquad \Delta\varpi_{\mathrm{N}}^{(1)} = -\mathbf{q}_{\mathrm{N}}\cdot\nabla\theta^{(0)} - Q_{\mathrm{N}}\theta^{(0)}.$$

Hence, based on (7.14) and (E.11), we can get an estimate for $(\varpi_D^{(1)}, \varpi_N^{(1)}, \vartheta^{(1)})$ given by

$$\left\|\varpi_{\mathrm{D},\mathrm{N}}^{(1)}\right\|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + \left\|\vartheta^{(1)}\right\|_{\Gamma;\,[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant \underline{c} \left|\theta^{(0)}\right|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} \leqslant \underline{c}_1 K(t),$$

for some constants $c_1 > 0$. Let us write $\sigma_m(t) = \sum_{j=1}^m a_j(t)$ where $a_m(t)$ is given by

$$a_m(t) := \left\| \varpi_{\mathrm{D,N}}^{(m)} \right\|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + \left\| \vartheta^{(m)} \right\|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)}.$$

As shown previously, we have $\sigma_1(t) = a_1(t) \leqslant c_1 K(t)$. So, from (7.13) and (7.14), with $\varepsilon_6 > 0$ taken sufficiently small, we can get a bound for the sum $\sigma_m(t) = \sum_{j=1}^m a_j(t)$ given as follows

$$\sigma_m(t) \leqslant c \left(K(t) + \sum_{j=1}^m \int_0^t \max_{\Gamma} \left| \frac{\partial}{\partial s} \vartheta^{(j)}(\cdot, s) \right| ds \right),$$

for some constant c>0 (independent of m), for all $m=2,3,\ldots$ Applying Grönwall's lemma, we deduce that the sums $\sigma_m(t)$, for $m=2,3,\ldots$, are also uniformly bounded above by K(t). Thus, the series sums $\sum_{j=1}^m a_j(t)$ actually converges. As a result, the sequence $\{(\varpi_{\mathbf{D}}^{(m)},\varpi_{\mathbf{N}}^{(m)},\vartheta^{(m)})\}_m$ converges in the corresponding norm. Passing to the limit as $m \to \infty$, we finally get the solution to system (7.1).

The Schauder method used above only proves the existence of a solution to system (7.1), which at the same time satisfies the estimate (7.2). Thus, it remains only to address the issue of uniqueness of the solution. To do this, we assume that two solutions, $(\varpi_D^1, \varpi_N^1, \vartheta^1)$ and $(\varpi_D^2, \varpi_N^2, \vartheta^2)$, to system (7.1) exist. Clearly, their difference is also a solution to (7.1) with $F_D \equiv 0$, $F_N \equiv 0$, and $\psi \equiv 0$. Moreover, the estimate (7.2) remains valid, from which we see that $\varpi_D^1 - \varpi_D^2 \equiv 0$, $\varpi_N^1 - \varpi_N^2 \equiv 0$, and $\vartheta^1 - \vartheta^2 \equiv 0$. This completes the proof of Lemma 7.2. \square

8. Proof of the main result

We are now in the position to prove Theorem 4.4 by adapting a technique used in [14], Section 5. Also, we will verify at the end of the section our claims in Theorem 3.2 by using Theorem 4.4 and through the change of variables. Regarding the latter objective, the interpolation inequalities stated in the lemma below will be central to our proof.

Lemma 8.1. For some $\alpha \in (0,1)$, let $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ be an open, connected, bounded set of class $C^{2+\alpha}$ and $u \in$ $C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})$. Then, there exist a constant $\varepsilon_5 > 0$ such that for any $\varepsilon \in (0, \varepsilon_5)$ the following inequalities hold

$$\max_{\overline{\Omega}} |\nabla u| \leqslant \varepsilon^{1+\alpha} |u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{c_7}{\varepsilon} \max_{\overline{\Omega}} |u|,
|u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2)} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\alpha} |u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{c_8}{\varepsilon^2} \max_{\overline{\Omega}} |u|,$$
(8.1)

$$|u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2)} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\alpha} |u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{c_8}{\varepsilon^2} \max_{\overline{\Omega}} |u|,$$
 (8.2)

where $c_7 := c_7(d, \Omega, \varepsilon)$ and $c_8 := c_8(d, \Omega, \varepsilon)$ are positive constants that depend only on the dimension d, the number ε , and Ω .

See Appendix E.4 for the proof.

Proof of Theorem 4.4. Let us now recall the nonlinear problem (6.3). We will prove its solvability by giving an estimate for the nonlinear terms

$$\begin{split} \mathcal{N}[V_{i},\tilde{\rho}] &= -(\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \mathcal{L}_{0})V_{i} - (\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \mathcal{L}_{0} - \delta\mathcal{L}_{0})U_{i} \\ &- (\mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \mathcal{M}_{0})V_{i} - (\mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \mathcal{M}_{0} - \delta\mathcal{M}_{0})U_{i}, \\ &- (\mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}V_{i} + \mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}U_{i})(\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}\tilde{\rho} - \mathcal{L}_{0}\tilde{\rho}) & \text{in } \Omega, \qquad i = \mathrm{D, N}, \\ \mathcal{B}[V_{\mathrm{D}}, V_{\mathrm{N}}, \tilde{\rho}] &= - \left[(B_{\tilde{\rho}} - B_{0} - \delta B_{0}) \frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{DN}}^{0}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}} + (B_{\tilde{\rho}} - B_{0}) \frac{\partial V_{\mathrm{DN}}}{\partial \nu_{\circ}} \right] & \text{on } \Gamma. \end{split}$$

We start by noting the following formulae:

$$(\mathcal{F}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \mathcal{F}_0)V = \int_0^1 \frac{d}{d\lambda} (\mathcal{F}_{\lambda\tilde{\rho}} V) d\lambda,$$

$$(\mathcal{F}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \mathcal{F}_0 - \delta \mathcal{F}_0)V = \int_0^1 \left\{ \frac{d}{d\lambda} (\mathcal{F}_{\lambda\tilde{\rho}} V) - \frac{d}{d\mu} (\mathcal{F}_{\mu\tilde{\rho}} V) \Big|_{\mu=0} \right\} d\lambda = \int_0^1 (1 - \mu) \frac{d^2}{d\mu^2} (\mathcal{F}_{\mu\tilde{\rho}} V) d\lambda,$$

where the operator $\mathcal{F} \in \{\mathcal{L}, \mathcal{M}, \mathcal{B}\}$. Using these formulae, and by expanding the derivative $\frac{d}{d\lambda}(F(\lambda\tilde{\rho},\lambda\nabla\tilde{\rho}))$, it can be verified that $(\mathcal{F}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \mathcal{F}_0)V$, $\mathcal{F} \equiv \mathcal{L}$, $V \in \{V_D, V_N\}$, can be expressed as a linear combination of terms containing the products $\tilde{\rho}V_{y_jy_i}$ and $\tilde{\rho}_{y_k}V_{y_jy_i}$, for $i,j,k=1,2\ldots,d$. Here, for notational convenience, $\tilde{\rho}_{y_k}$ is used to denote the partial derivative of $\tilde{\rho}$ with respect to the variable y_k while $V_{y_jy_i}$ stands for the second-order partial derivative of W with respect to the variables y_i and y_j . Meanwhile, $(\mathcal{F}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \mathcal{F}_0 - \delta\mathcal{F}_0)U_0$, $\mathcal{F} \in \{\mathcal{L}, \mathcal{M}, \mathcal{B}\}$, $U_0 \in \{U_D^0, U_N^0\}$, can be written as a linear combination of terms containing the products $\tilde{\rho}^2$, $\tilde{\rho}\tilde{\rho}_{y_j}$, and $\tilde{\rho}_{y_k}\tilde{\rho}_{y_j}$ (cf. [14], p. 131). Note also that the terms involving $\mathcal{F}_{\tilde{\rho}} - \mathcal{F}_0$, $\mathcal{F} \in \{\mathcal{L}, \mathcal{M}, \mathcal{B}\}$, share similar structures. Indeed, the following expansions hold:

$$\begin{split} \frac{d}{d\lambda}(F(\lambda\tilde{\rho},\lambda\nabla\tilde{\rho})) &= F_{\tilde{\rho}}'(\lambda\tilde{\rho},\nabla\lambda\tilde{\rho})\tilde{\rho} + \sum_{j=1}^d F_{\tilde{\rho}_{y_j}}'(\lambda\tilde{\rho},\nabla\lambda\tilde{\rho})\tilde{\rho}_{y_j}, \\ \frac{d^2}{d\mu^2}(F(\mu\tilde{\rho},\mu\nabla\tilde{\rho})) &= F_{\tilde{\rho}\tilde{\rho}}''(\mu\tilde{\rho},\nabla\mu\tilde{\rho})\tilde{\rho}^2 + 2\sum_{j=1}^d F_{\tilde{\rho}\tilde{\rho}_{y_j}}''(\mu\tilde{\rho},\nabla\mu\tilde{\rho})\tilde{\rho}\tilde{\rho}_{y_j} + \sum_{k,j=1}^d F_{\tilde{\rho}_{y_k}\tilde{\rho}_{y_j}}'(\mu\tilde{\rho},\nabla\mu\tilde{\rho})\tilde{\rho}_{y_k}\tilde{\rho}_{y_j}. \end{split}$$

Hence, all the nonlinear terms of $\mathcal{N}[V_{\rm N}, \tilde{\rho}]$ and $\mathcal{N}[V_{\rm D}, \tilde{\rho}]$ consist of a multiplier term $\tilde{\rho}$ or a first-order partial derivative $\tilde{\rho}_{y_j}$. Moreover, they are linear with respect to the second-order derivatives of the unknowns $V_{\rm N}$ and $V_{\rm D}$. Thus, we only need to estimate the product of two functions, one of which contains $\tilde{\rho}$ or $\tilde{\rho}_{y_j}$.

Let us estimate, for instance, the product $\tilde{\rho}_{y_k}V_{y_jy_i}$ over the domain Ω , for $i, j, k = 1, \ldots, d$, $V \in \{V_D, V_N\}$. First, let us note that $\tilde{\rho}$ (see (4.13)) and V are $C^{2+\alpha}$ smooth on $\overline{\Omega}$. By using the interpolation inequality (8.1) in Lemma E.3 we can get the estimate

$$\left|\tilde{\rho}_{y_k} V_{y_j y_i}\right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(\alpha)} \leqslant \max_{\overline{\Omega}} \left|\tilde{\rho}_{y_k}\right| |V|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} \leqslant \left(\varepsilon^{1+\alpha} \left|\tilde{\rho}\right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{c_7}{\varepsilon} \max_{\overline{\Omega}} \left|\tilde{\rho}\right|\right) |V|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)},$$

for some constant $c_7 := c_7(d) > 0$. Note that, in the above, we performed the estimate by first taking the max norm of $\tilde{\rho}_{y_k}$ on $\overline{\Omega}$ in order to apply (8.1). Alternatively, one could obtain the same estimate by first writing

$$\left|\tilde{\rho}_{y_k} V_{y_j y_i}\right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(\alpha)} \leqslant \left|\tilde{\rho}_{y_k}\right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)} \left|V_{y_j y_i}\right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(\alpha)} + \left|\tilde{\rho}_{y_k}\right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(\alpha)} \left|V_{y_j y_i}\right|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)},$$

and then applying the equalities and interpolation inequalities given by Equations (E.2), (E.3), (E.7), and (E.8) in Appendices E.3 and E.4.

Because $\tilde{\rho}$ vanishes on the exterior boundary Σ (see (4.14)), the maximum principle implies that $\max_{\overline{\Omega}} |\tilde{\rho}| \leq \max_{\Gamma} |\tilde{\rho}|$. Then, from the previous estimate, and in view of (E.5), we get

$$\begin{split} \left| \tilde{\rho}_{y_k} V_{y_j y_i} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(\alpha)} & \leqslant \left(\varepsilon^{1 + \alpha} \left| \tilde{\rho} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(2 + \alpha)} + \frac{c_7}{\varepsilon} \int_0^t \max_{\Gamma} \left| \tilde{\rho}_s(\cdot, s) \right| ds \right) |V|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(2 + \alpha)} \\ & \leqslant |V|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(2 + \alpha)} \left(\varepsilon^{1 + \alpha} \left| \tilde{\rho} \right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(2 + \alpha)} + \frac{c_7}{\varepsilon} t \left| \tilde{\rho}_{\tau} \right|_{\Gamma; [0, t]}^{\infty} \right). \end{split}$$

Letting $\varepsilon = t^{\frac{1}{2+\alpha}}$, we get the estimate

$$\left|\tilde{\rho}_{y_k} V_{y_j y_i}\right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(\alpha)} \leqslant \tilde{c}_0 t^{\eta} \left|V\right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \left(\left|\tilde{\rho}\right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + \left|\tilde{\rho}_{\tau}\right|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{\infty}\right),$$

for some constant $\tilde{c}_0 > 0$, where $\eta = \frac{1+\alpha}{2+\alpha} \in (0,1)$, for each function $V \in \{V_D, V_N\}$.

We next estimate the nonlinear terms in the boundary condition. Because these terms do not contain the second-order derivatives of the unknown functions – in fact, on the boundary Γ , we only have linear combinations of the products of $\tilde{\rho}$ and the unknown functions $V_{\rm D}$ and $V_{\rm N}$, up to their first-order derivatives – we can estimate them in the $C^0([0,T];C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma))$ -norm via the interpolation inequality (cf. (E.8))

$$|\tilde{\rho}|_{\Gamma}^{(2)} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\alpha} |\tilde{\rho}|_{\Gamma}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{c_8}{\varepsilon^2} \max_{\Gamma} |\tilde{\rho}|, \qquad (8.3)$$

for some constant $c_8 := c_8(d) > 0$. The above estimates follows from (8.1), the maximum principle, and the fact that $\tilde{\rho}$ vanishes on the fixed boundary Σ . The end estimate in the $C^0([0,T];C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma))$ -norm is achieved through (8.3) in combination with the identities in (E.3) and of the first estimate in (E.4). Now, while keeping these informations in mind, we employ the aforementioned estimates to obtain

$$|\mathcal{N}[V_{D}, \tilde{\rho}]|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(\alpha)} + |\mathcal{N}[V_{N}, \tilde{\rho}]|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(\alpha)} + |\mathcal{B}[V_{D}, V_{N}, \tilde{\rho}]|_{\Gamma}^{(1+\alpha)}$$

$$\leq \tilde{c}_{1} t^{\eta} \left(|V_{D}|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + |V_{N}|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + |\tilde{\rho}|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \right) \left(|\tilde{\rho}|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + |\tilde{\rho}_{\tau}|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{\infty} \right)$$

$$\leq \tilde{c}_{1} t^{\eta} \left(\mathbb{W}[V_{D}, V_{N}, \tilde{\rho}](t) \right)^{2}, \tag{8.4}$$

where

$$\mathbb{W}[V_{\mathrm{D}}, V_{\mathrm{N}}, \tilde{\rho}](t) := \|V_{\mathrm{D},\mathrm{N}}\|_{\overline{\Omega}: [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + \|\tilde{\rho}\|_{\overline{\Omega}: \Gamma: [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)},$$

for some constant $\tilde{c}_1 > 0$ and $\eta > 0$. Here, the notation $\mathbb{W}[V_D, V_N, \tilde{\rho}](t)$ is introduced for convenience of later use.

The rest of the proof applies the method of successive approximation. To this end, we will need the following estimate (cf. [14], Eq. (5.3), p. 131) in our argumentation further below. Let us consider the functions

$$V_{\rm D1}, V_{\rm D2}, V_{\rm N1}, V_{\rm N2}, \tilde{\rho}_1, \tilde{\rho}_2 \in C^0([0,T]; C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})) \quad \text{such that} \quad \tilde{\rho}_{1t}, \tilde{\rho}_{2t} \in C^0([0,T]; C^{1+\alpha}(\Gamma)).$$

Then, by estimate (8.4), we have

$$\begin{split} &|\mathcal{N}[V_{\mathrm{D}2},\tilde{\rho}_{2}] - \mathcal{N}[V_{\mathrm{D}1},\tilde{\rho}_{1}]|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(\alpha)} + |\mathcal{N}[V_{\mathrm{N}2},\tilde{\rho}_{2}] - \mathcal{N}[V_{\mathrm{N}1},\tilde{\rho}_{1}]|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(\alpha)} \\ &+ |\mathcal{B}[V_{\mathrm{D}2},V_{\mathrm{N}2},\tilde{\rho}_{2}] - \mathcal{B}[V_{\mathrm{D}1},V_{\mathrm{N}1},\tilde{\rho}_{1}]|_{\Gamma}^{(1+\alpha)} \\ &\leqslant \tilde{c}_{2}t^{\eta} \left\{ \left(|V_{\mathrm{D}2} - V_{\mathrm{D}1}|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + |V_{\mathrm{N}2} - V_{\mathrm{N}1}|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + |\tilde{\rho}_{2} - \tilde{\rho}_{1}|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \right) \times \sum_{i=1,2} \left(|\tilde{\rho}_{i}|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + |\tilde{\rho}_{i\tau}|_{\Gamma;\,[0,t]}^{\infty} \right) \\ &+ \left(|\tilde{\rho}_{2} - \tilde{\rho}_{1}|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + |\tilde{\rho}_{2\tau} - \tilde{\rho}_{1\tau}|_{\Gamma;\,[0,t]}^{\infty} \right) \times \sum_{i=1,2} \left(|V_{\mathrm{D}i}|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + |V_{\mathrm{N}i}|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + |\tilde{\rho}_{i}|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \right) \right\} \\ &\leqslant \tilde{c}_{2}t^{\eta} \left(\mathbb{W}[W_{\mathrm{D}}, W_{\mathrm{N}}, \tilde{\rho}](t) \right) \left\{ \mathbb{W}[V_{\mathrm{D}1}, V_{\mathrm{N}1}, \tilde{\rho}_{1}](t) + \mathbb{W}[V_{\mathrm{D}2}, V_{\mathrm{N}2}, \tilde{\rho}_{2}](t) \right\}, \end{split}$$

where $W_D = V_{D2} - V_{D1}$, $W_N = V_{N2} - V_{N1}$, and $\tilde{\varrho} = \tilde{\rho}_2 - \tilde{\rho}_1$, for some constant $\tilde{c}_2 > 0$.

Now, we consider the initial approximation $(V_{\rm D}^{(0)}, V_{\rm N}^{(0)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(0)})$, which we assume satisfies the linear system (7.1) with $F_{\rm D}(y,t)=0$ and $F_{\rm N}(y,t)=0$ for $y\in\Omega,\,t>0$, and $\psi(y,t)=-B_0\frac{\partial U_{\rm DN}^0}{\partial\nu_{\rm o}}$ for $y\in\Gamma,\,t>0$. Meanwhile, the approximants $\{(V_{\rm D}^{(m+1)}, V_{\rm N}^{(m+1)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)})\}_m$, for $m=0,1,\ldots$, are defined as solutions to the problem

$$\begin{cases}
\Delta V_{\rm D}^{(m+1)} + \mathbf{q}_{\rm D} \cdot \nabla \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)} + Q_{\rm D} \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)} = \mathcal{N}[V_{\rm D}^{(m)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(m)}], & y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \\
V_{\rm D}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, & V_{\rm D}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\Delta V_{\rm N}^{(m+1)} + \mathbf{q}_{\rm N} \cdot \nabla \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)} + Q_{\rm N} \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)} = \mathcal{N}[V_{\rm N}^{(m)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(m)}], & y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \\
\frac{\partial}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} V_{\rm N}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, & V_{\rm N}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} = 0, \\
\Delta \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)} = 0, & y \in \Omega, \ t > 0 \qquad \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} = 0, \\
\left(\frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)}}{\partial t} + b_{\perp} \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)}}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} + \mathbf{b}_{\parallel} \cdot \nabla_{\Gamma} \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)} + h \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)} + B_{0} \frac{\partial V_{\rm DN}^{(m+1)}}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}}\right)\Big|_{y \in \Gamma} \\
= \mathcal{B}[V_{\rm D}^{(m)}, V_{\rm N}^{(m)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(m)}] - B_{0} \frac{\partial U_{\rm DN}^{0}}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}}, \\
\tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Gamma, t = 0} = 0.
\end{cases} \tag{8.6}$$

Our goal now is to show that all approximants are defined on some interval I^* and that the sequence of sub-approximants $\{V_{\rm D}^{(m)}\}$, $\{V_{\rm N}^{(m)}\}$, and $\{\tilde{\rho}^{(m)}\}$ converge.

By virtue of Theorem 7.1, the initial approximation $(V_{\rm D}^{(0)}, V_{\rm N}^{(0)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(0)})$ is defined for all $t \in [0, T]$ and satisfies the estimate

$$\mathbb{W}[V_{\mathbf{D}}^{(0)}, V_{\mathbf{N}}^{(0)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(0)}](t) \leqslant \tilde{c}_3 \|(U_{\mathbf{D}}^0, U_{\mathbf{N}}^0)\|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(2+\alpha)} =: \tilde{c}_3 \|U_{\mathbf{D}, \mathbf{N}}^0\|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(2+\alpha)}, \quad \text{for all } t \leqslant T,$$

$$(8.7)$$

for some constant $\tilde{c}_3 > 0$. Meanwhile, to get an estimate for the first approximant $(V_D^{(1)}, V_N^{(1)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(1)})$, we apply Theorem 7.1 to (8.6), with m = 0, to obtain

$$\mathbb{W}[V_{D}^{(1)}, V_{N}^{(1)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(1)}](t) \leqslant \tilde{c}_{3} \left\{ \left| \mathcal{N}[V_{N}^{(0)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(0)}] \right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(\alpha)} + \left| \mathcal{N}[V_{N}^{(0)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(0)}] \right|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(\alpha)} \right. \\
+ \left| \mathcal{B}[V_{D}^{(0)}, V_{N}^{(0)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(0)}] \right|_{\Gamma}^{(1+\alpha)} + \left\| U_{D,N}^{0} \right\|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \right\} \\
\leqslant \tilde{c}_{3} \left\{ \tilde{c}_{1} t^{\eta} \left(\mathbb{W}[V_{D}^{(0)}, V_{N}^{(0)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(0)}](t) \right)^{2} + \left\| U_{D,N}^{0} \right\|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \right\} \\
\leqslant \tilde{c}_{3}^{3} \tilde{c}_{1} t^{\eta} \left(\left\| U_{D,N}^{0} \right\|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \right)^{2} + \tilde{c}_{3} \left\| U_{D,N}^{0} \right\|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \\
=: L(t), \tag{8.8}$$

where the second inequality follows from (8.4), while the third one is due to estimate (8.7). We introduce the following notations:

$$W_{\rm D}^{(m+1)} = V_{\rm D}^{(m+1)} - V_{\rm D}^{(m)}, \qquad W_{\rm N}^{(m+1)} = V_{\rm N}^{(m+1)} - V_{\rm N}^{(m)}, \qquad \text{and} \quad \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)} = \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)} - \tilde{\rho}^{(m)}.$$

Then, by telescoping sums, we see that

$$V_{\mathrm{D}}^{(m+1)} = V_{\mathrm{D}}^{(1)} + \sum_{j=1}^{m} W_{\mathrm{D}}^{(j+1)}, \qquad V_{\mathrm{D}}^{(m+1)} = V_{\mathrm{D}}^{(1)} + \sum_{j=1}^{m} W_{\mathrm{D}}^{(j+1)}, \qquad \text{and} \quad \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)} = \tilde{\rho}^{(1)} + \sum_{j=1}^{m} \tilde{\varrho}^{(j+1)}.$$

Moreover, by (8.6), $W_{\mathrm{D}}^{(m+1)}$, $W_{\mathrm{N}}^{(m+1)}$, and $\tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)}$ satisfy

$$\begin{cases} \Delta W_{\rm D}^{(m+1)} + \mathbf{q}_{\rm D} \cdot \nabla \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)} + Q_{\rm D} \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)} \\ &= \mathcal{N}[V_{\rm D}^{(m)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(m)}] - \mathcal{N}[V_{\rm D}^{(m-1)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(m-1)}], \qquad y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \\ W_{\rm D}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} &= 0, \qquad W_{\rm D}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} &= 0, \\ \Delta W_{\rm N}^{(m+1)} + \mathbf{q}_{\rm N} \cdot \nabla \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)} + Q_{\rm N} \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)} \\ &= \mathcal{N}[V_{\rm N}^{(m)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(m)}] - \mathcal{N}[V_{\rm N}^{(m-1)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(m-1)}], \qquad y \in \Omega, \ t > 0, \\ \frac{\partial}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} W_{\rm N}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} &= 0, \qquad W_{\rm N}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} &= 0, \\ \Delta \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)} &= 0, \quad y \in \Omega, \ t > 0 \qquad \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Sigma} &= 0, \\ \left(\frac{\partial \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)}}{\partial t} + b_{\perp} \frac{\partial \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)}}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} + \mathbf{b}_{\parallel} \cdot \nabla_{\Gamma} \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)} + h \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)} + B_{0} \frac{\partial W_{\rm DN}^{(m+1)}}{\partial \nu_{\rm o}} \right) \Big|_{y \in \Gamma} \\ &= \mathcal{B}[V_{\rm D}^{(m)}, V_{\rm N}^{(m)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(m)}] - \mathcal{B}[V_{\rm D}^{(m-1)}, V_{\rm N}^{(m-1)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(m-1)}], \\ \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)} \Big|_{y \in \Gamma, t = 0} &= 0. \end{cases}$$

We again utilize Theorem 7.1 and make use of the estimate (8.5), to obtain

$$\mathbb{W}[W_{\mathbf{D}}^{(m+1)}, W_{\mathbf{N}}^{(m+1)}, \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)}](t) \leqslant \tilde{c}_{2}\tilde{c}_{3}t^{\eta} \left(\sum_{j=m,m-1} \mathbb{W}[V_{\mathbf{D}}^{(j)}, V_{\mathbf{N}}^{(j)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(j)}](t) \right) \mathbb{W}[W_{\mathbf{D}}^{(m)}, W_{\mathbf{N}}^{(m)}, \tilde{\varrho}^{(m)}](t). \tag{8.10}$$

We are now in the position to determine the maximum time t^* so that the claims we state in Theorem 4.4 are valid. First, we choose t^* so that our first approximant satisfies

$$(t^{\star})^{\eta} \mathbb{W}[V_{\mathcal{D}}^{(1)}, V_{\mathcal{N}}^{(1)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(1)}](t) \leqslant (t^{\star})^{\eta} L(t) \leqslant M_0$$

and such that $M^\star=2\tilde{c}_2\tilde{c}_3M_0 < M_1 < 1$, for some fixed constant $M_1>0$. Clearly, the initial approximant $\mathbb{W}[V_{\mathrm{D}}^{(0)},V_{\mathrm{N}}^{(0)},\tilde{\rho}^{(0)}](t)$ also satisfy the estimate $(t^\star)^\eta\mathbb{W}[V_{\mathrm{D}}^{(0)},V_{\mathrm{N}}^{(0)},\tilde{\rho}^{(0)}](t)\leqslant M_0$. We then assume that $(V_{\mathrm{D}}^{(j)},V_{\mathrm{N}}^{(j)},\tilde{\rho}^{(j)}),\ j=0,1,\ldots,m$, are defined for $t\in I^\star$ and satisfy the estimate

$$(t^*)^{\eta} \mathbb{W}[V_{\mathcal{D}}^{(j)}, V_{\mathcal{N}}^{(j)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(j)}](t) \leqslant M_0, \text{ for all } j = 0, 1, \dots, m.$$
 (8.11)

By Theorem 7.1, it follows that the (m+1)th approximant given by the triplet $(V_{\rm D}^{(m+1)}, V_{\rm N}^{(m+1)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(m+1)})$ is also defined in I^* . Combining estimates (8.10) and (8.11), we get

$$\mathbb{W}[W_{\mathbf{D}}^{(m+1)}, W_{\mathbf{N}}^{(m+1)}, \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)}](t^{\star}) \leqslant 2\tilde{c}_{2}\tilde{c}_{3}M_{0}\mathbb{W}[W_{\mathbf{D}}^{(m)}, W_{\mathbf{N}}^{(m)}, \tilde{\varrho}^{(m)}](t^{\star})$$
$$\leqslant M^{\star}\mathbb{W}[W_{\mathbf{D}}^{(m)}, W_{\mathbf{N}}^{(m)}, \tilde{\varrho}^{(m)}](t^{\star}).$$

Taking the sum of above inequality with respect to j from 0 to m yields

$$\begin{split} S_{m+1} &:= \sum_{j=0}^{m} \mathbb{W}[W_{\mathrm{D}}^{(j+1)}, W_{\mathrm{N}}^{(j+1)}, \tilde{\varrho}^{(j+1)}](t) \\ &\leqslant M^{\star} \sum_{j=0}^{m} \mathbb{W}[W_{\mathrm{D}}^{(j)}, W_{\mathrm{N}}^{(j)}, \tilde{\varrho}^{(j)}](t) \\ &= M^{\star} S_{m+1} + M^{\star} \left(\mathbb{W}[W_{\mathrm{D}}^{(0)}, W_{\mathrm{N}}^{(0)}, \tilde{\varrho}^{(0)}](t) - \mathbb{W}[W_{\mathrm{D}}^{(m+1)}, W_{\mathrm{N}}^{(m+1)}, \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)}](t) \right) \\ &\leqslant M^{\star} S_{m+1} + M^{\star} \mathbb{W}[W_{\mathrm{D}}^{(0)}, W_{\mathrm{N}}^{(0)}, \tilde{\varrho}^{(0)}](t) \\ &\leqslant M^{\star} S_{m+1} + L(t), \end{split}$$

where the last inequality follows from (8.8) and the fact that $M^* < 1$. The above estimate clearly shows that the sums S_{m+1} , $m = 0, 1, \ldots$, are uniformly bounded by L(t). This information implies that the series sums $\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \mathbb{W}[W_{\mathrm{D}}^{(j+1)}, W_{\mathrm{N}}^{(j+1)}, \tilde{\varrho}^{(j+1)}](t)$ converges for all $t \in I^*$ and that $\{(V_{\mathrm{D}}^{(m+1)}, V_{\mathrm{N}}^{(m+1)}, \tilde{\varrho}^{(m+1)})\}_m$, $m = 0, 1, \ldots$, also satisfy inequality condition (8.11).

Finally, passing to the limit $m \to \infty$, we conclude that

$$(V_{\mathrm{D}}, V_{\mathrm{N}}, \tilde{\rho}) = \lim_{m \to \infty} (V_{\mathrm{D}}^{(m)}, V_{\mathrm{N}}^{(m)}, \tilde{\rho}^{(m)})$$

is a solution to (6.3) satisfying the estimate

$$\mathbb{W}[V_{\mathcal{D}}, V_{\mathcal{N}}, \tilde{\rho}](t) \leqslant cL(t) \leqslant c \left\| U_{\mathcal{D}, \mathcal{N}}^{0} \right\|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0, t]}^{(2+\alpha)}, \quad \text{for all } t \in I^{\star},$$

$$(8.12)$$

for some constant c > 0.

To complete the proof of Theorem 4.4, we need to revert to the original unknown functions that resolve the transformed problem (4.7). As stated in Section 6, we have the relations $U_{\rm D} = V_{\rm D} + U_{\rm D}^0$ and $U_{\rm N} = V_{\rm N} + U_{\rm N}^0$. These functions, along with $\tilde{\rho}$, solve (4.7). Additionally, estimate (4.16) is derived from (8.12), in conjunction with estimates (5.6) and (5.8). Furthermore, since the difference between two solutions must also satisfy estimate (4.16) with a zero right-hand side, the solution $(U_{\rm D}, U_{\rm N}, \tilde{\rho})$ is unique. Finally, to obtain ρ , we set $\rho = \tilde{\rho}|_{\Gamma}$ and then determine the free boundary using the description given in (3.1).

$$\Gamma(t) := \left\{ x \in \mathbb{R}^d \mid x = \xi + \rho(\xi, t) \mathbf{N}(\xi), \ \xi \in \Gamma \right\}, \quad \text{for } t \in I^*.$$

To conclude this section, we remark – as alluded at an earlier part of this note – that the main result given by Theorem 3.2 follows from Theorem 4.4 which asserts the local-in-time solvability of problem (4.7). Indeed, recalling the change of variables $Y^{-1}(y,t)$ from (4.5), we can transform the fixed domain Ω to the moving domain $\Omega(t)$, for $t \in I^*$, and retrieve the functions $u_D(x,t) = U_D(y,t) = u_D(Y^{-1}(y,t),t)$ and $u_N(x,t) = U_N(y,t) = u_N(Y^{-1}(y,t),t)$ (cf. (C.1)) as the pair of solutions to (1.1). In addition, estimate (3.2) immediately follows from (4.16), confirming our assertion. This verifies Theorem 3.2.

9. Summary and final remarks

In this study, we have rigorously established the well-posedness of the moving boundary problem (1.1), proving the local-in-time existence of classical solutions under key assumptions, including the positivity of the data and Assumption 3.1. These conditions form the foundation of our theoretical framework and are essential for ensuring the mathematical consistency of the analysis. Furthermore, the results obtained here implicitly support the stability of numerical schemes designed for related problems in shape optimization.

The problem addressed is closely connected to the classical Hele–Shaw problem in the expanding case, whose well-posedness has been widely studied through various analytical approaches, such as variational inequality formulations and other advanced techniques, as detailed in [59, 61–63]. Despite these developments, several important directions remain open for the problem considered here. Extending the analysis to describe the long-time behavior of solutions and to identify possible steady states presents a natural continuation of this work. Additionally, relaxing the assumptions adopted here—for instance, by reducing the regularity of the moving boundary or by reformulating the problem in a generalized setting—would offer valuable insights, although these extensions are expected to involve significant analytical challenges. The established mathematical tools cited above are anticipated to remain central in addressing these issues. Lastly, translating this theoretical framework to more physically relevant or applied contexts offers both promising opportunities and technical difficulties, providing a rich avenue for future investigation.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

We sincerely thank the two reviewers for their valuable feedback, careful corrections to the initial version of the manuscript, and insightful suggestions, all of which have significantly enhanced the quality of this work.

Funding

The work of JFTR is supported by the JSPS Postdoctoral Fellowships for Research in Japan (Grant Number JP24KF0221), and partially by the JSPS Grant-in-Aid for Early-Career Scientists (Grant Number JP23K13012) and the JST CREST (Grant Number JPMJCR2014). The work of MK is supported by the JSPS KAKENHI Grant Numbers JP25K00920 and JP24H00184.

DATA AVAILABILITY STATEMENT

The research data associated with this article are included in the article.

References

- [1] M.C. Delfour and J.-P. Zolésio, Shapes and Geometries: Metrics, Analysis, Differential Calculus, and Optimization. Vol. 22 of Adv. Des. Control, 2nd edn. SIAM, PA (2011).
- [2] A. Henrot and M. Pierre, Shape Variation and Optimization: A Geometrical Analysis. Vol. 28 of *Tracts in Mathematics*. European Mathematical Society, Zürich (2018).
- [3] J. Sokołowski and J.-P. Zolésio, Introduction to Shape Optimization. Vol. 16 of Springer Series in Computational Mathematics. Springer, Berlin, Heidelberg (1992).
- [4] K. Eppler and H. Harbrecht, A regularized Newton method in electrical impedance tomography using shape Hessian information. Control Cybernet. 34 (2005) 203–225.
- [5] J.R. Roche and J. Sokołowski, Numerical methods for shape identification problems. Control Cybernet. 25 (1996) 867–895.
- [6] L. Afraites, A new coupled complex boundary method (CCBM) for an inverse obstacle problem. *Discrete Contin. Dyn. Syst. Ser. S* **15** (2022) 23–40.
- [7] I. Akduman and R. Kress, Electrostatic imaging via conformal mapping. Inverse Probl. 18 (2002) 1659–1672.
- [8] G. Alessandrini, V. Isakov and J. Powell, Local uniqueness in the inverse problem with one measurement. *Trans. Am. Math. Soc.* **347** (1995) 3031–3041.
- [9] G. Alessandrini and A. Diaz Valenzuela, Unique determination of multiple cracks by two measurements. SIAM J. Control Optim. 34 (1996) 913–921.

- [10] L. Bourgeois and J. Dardé, A quasi-reversibility approach to solve the inverse obstacle problem. Inverse Prob. Imaging 4 (2010) 351–377.
- [11] R. Chapko and R. Kress, A hybrid method for inverse boundary value problems in potential theory. J. Inv. Ill-Posed Probl. 13 (2005) 27–40.
- [12] F. Hettlich and W. Rundell, The determination of a discontinuity in a conductivity from a single boundary measurement. *Inverse Probl.* 14 (1998) 67–82.
- [13] V. Isakov, Inverse Problems for Partial Differential Equations, Vol. 127. Springer Business & Media (2066).
- [14] G.I. Bizhanova and V.A. Solonnikov, On free boundary problems for the second order parabolic equations on free boundary problems for the second order parabolic equations. *Algebra Anal.* **12** (2000) 98–139.
- [15] V.A. Solonnikov, Lectures on Evolution Free Boundary Problems: Classical Solutions. Lect. Notes Math. Springer (2003) 123–175.
- [16] J. Escher and G. Simonett, Classical solutions of multidimensional Hele–Shaw models. SIAM J. Math. Anal. 28 (1997) 1028–1047.
- [17] P. Cardaliaguet and O. Ley, Some flows in shape optimization. Arch. Rational Mech. Anal. 183 (2007) 21–58.
- [18] P. Cardaliaguet and E. Rouy, Viscosity solutions of increasing flows of sets. application of the Hele–Shaw problem for power-law fluids. SIAM J. Math. Anal. 38 (2006) 143–165.
- [19] Y. Giga, Surface Evolution Equations A Level Set Approach. Vol. 99 of Monographs in Mathematics. Birkhäuser, Basel (2006).
- [20] P.I. Plotnikov and J. Sokołowski, Geometric aspects of shape optimization. J. Geom. Anal. 33 (2023) Article 206.
- [21] P.I. Plotnikov and J. Sokołowski, Gradient flow for Kohn-Vogelius functional. Siberian Electron. Math. Rep. 20 (2023) 524-579.
- [22] L. Hörmander, The Analysis of Linear Partial Differential Operators. Springer, New York (1983–1985).
- [23] V. Šverák, On optimal shape design. J. Math. Pures Appl. 72 (1993) 537–551.
- [24] A. Henrot, W. Horn and J. Sokołowski, Domain optimization problem for stationary heat equation. Appl. Math. Comp. Sci. 6 (1996) 353–374.
- [25] D. Bucur and J.-P. Zolésio, n-dimensional shape optimization under the capacitary constraints. J. Differ. Equ. 123 (1995) 504–522.
- [26] L. Afraites and J.F.T. Rabago, Boundary shape reconstruction with Robin condition: existence result, stability analysis, and inversion via multiple measurements. Comput. Appl. Math. 43 (2024) Article 270.
- [27] J. Crank, Free and Moving Boundary Problems. Clarendon Press (1984).
- [28] C.M. Elliot and J.R. Ockendon, Weak and Variational Methods for Moving Boundary Problems. Pitman, Boston (1982).
- [29] S. Richardson, Hele-Shaw flows with a free boundary produced by the injection of the fluid into a narrow channel. J. Fluid Mech. 56 (1972) 609-618.
- [30] J.W. Neuberger, Sobolev Gradients and Differential Equations. Vol. 1670 of *Lecture Notes in Mathematics*, 2nd edn. Springer-Verlag, Berlin, Heidelberg (2010).
- [31] H. Azegami, Shape Optimization Problems. Springer Optimization and its Applications. Springer, Singapore (2020).
- [32] G. Dogan, P. Morin, R.H. Nochetto and M. Verani, Discrete gradient flows for shape optimization and applications. Comput. Methods Appl. Mech. Eng. 196 (2007) 3898–3914.
- [33] B. Mohammadi and O. Pironneau, Applied Shape Optimization for Fluids. Clarendon Press, Oxford (2001).
- [34] L. Afraites, M. Dambrine, K. Eppler and D. Kateb, Detecting perfectly insulated obstacles by shape optimization techniques of order two. Discrete Contin. Dyn. Syst. B 8 (2007) 389–416.
- [35] J.F.T. Rabago and H. Azegami, Shape optimization approach to defect-shape identification with convective boundary condition via partial boundary measurement. Japan J. Indust. Appl. Math 36 (2019) 131–176.
- [36] Y. Sunayama, M. Kimura and J.F.T. Rabago, Comoving mesh method for certain classes of moving boundary problems. Japan J. Ind. Appl. Math. 39 (2022) 973–1001.
- [37] Y. Sunayama, J.F.T. Rabago and M. Kimura, Comoving mesh method for multi-dimensional moving boundary problems: Mean-curvature flow and Stefan problems. Math. Comput. Simul. 221 (2024) 589–605.
- [38] D. Colton and R. Kress, Inverse Acoustic and Electromagnetic Scattering Theory, 4th edn. Springer-Verlag, New York (2019).
- [39] F. Hecht, New development in FreeFem++. J. Numer. Math. 20 (2012) 251-265.

- [40] J.F.T. Rabago and H. Azegami, A second-order shape optimization algorithm for solving the exterior Bernoulli free boundary problem using a new boundary cost functional. Comput. Optim. Appl. 77 (2020) 251–305.
- [41] E.V. Frolova, Quasistationary approximation for the Stefan problem. J. Math. Sci. 132 (2006) 562-575.
- [42] D. Gilbarg and N.S. Trudinger, Elliptic Partial Differential Equations of Second Order, 2nd edn. Springer-Verlag, Berlin, Heidelberg (2001).
- [43] M. Kimura, Time local existence of a moving boundary of the Hele–Shaw flow with suction. Eur. J. Appl. Math. 10 (1999) 581–605.
- [44] J.F.T. Rabago, A. Hadri, L. Afraites, A.S. Hendy and M.A. Zaky, A robust alternating direction numerical scheme in a shape optimization setting for solving geometric inverse problems. *Comput. Math. Appl.* 175 (2024) 19–32.
- [45] L.C. Evans, Partial Differential Equations. Vol. 19 of Graduate Series in Mathematics, 1st edn. AMS (1998).
- [46] W.W. Hager, Updating the inverse of a matrix. SIAM Rev. 31 (1999) 221-239.
- [47] J. Sherman and W.J. Morrison, Adjustment of an inverse matrix corresponding to changes in the elements of a given column or a given row of the original matrix. *Ann. Math. Stat.* **20** (1949).
- [48] M.A. Woodbury, The Stability of Out-Input Matrices. Chicago, III (1949) 5.
- [49] O.A. Ladyženskaja and N.N. Ural'ceva, Equations aux Dérivées Partielles de Type Elliptique. Dunod, Paris (1968).
- [50] C. Miranda, Partial Differential Equations of Elliptic Type. Ergebnisse der Mathematik und ihrer Grenzgebiete 2, 2nd edn. Springer-Verlag, Berlin, Heidelberg (1970).
- [51] O.D. Kellog, On the derivates of harmonic functions on the boundary. Trans. Mat. Soc. 33 (1931) 486-510.
- [52] J. Schauder, Über lineare elliptische differentialgleichungen zweiter ordnung. Math. Z. 38 (1934) 257–282.
- [53] R. Fiorenza, Hölder and Locally Hölder Continuous Functions, and Open Sets of Class C^k , $C^{k,\lambda}$. Birkhaüser (2017).
- [54] G. Nardi, Schauder estimate for solutions of Poisson's equation with Neumann boundary condition. L'Enseign. Math. 60 (2014) 421–435.
- [55] B.K. Driver, Analysis with Applications. Part 2. Springer (2003).
- [56] G.M. Troianiello, Elliptic Differential Equations and Obstacle Problems. Plenum Press, New York (1987).
- [57] B.K. Driver, Analysis with Applications. Part 1. Springer (2003).
- [58] S.N. Antontsev, C.R. Gonçalves and A.M. Meirmanov, Exact estimates for the classical solutions to the free boundary problem in the Hele-Shaw cell. *Adv. Diff. Equ.* 8 (2003) 1259–1280.
- [59] B. Gustafsson, Applications of variational inequalities to a moving boundary problem for Hele–Shaw flows. SIAM J. Math. Anal. 16 (1985) 279–300.
- [60] M.R. Ebert and M. Reissig, Methods for Partial Differential Equations. Qualitative Properties of Solutions, Phase Space Analysis, Semilinear Models. Birkhäuser, Cham (2018).
- [61] A. Friedman, Variational Principles and Free Boundary Problems. Wiley-Interscience, New York (1982).
- [62] D. Kinderlehrer, Variational inequalities and free boundary problems. Bull. Am. Math. Soc. 84 (1978) 7–26.
- [63] D. Kinderlehrer and G. Stampacchia, An Introduction to Variational Inequalities and their Applications. Academic Press, New York (1980).
- [64] P. Hartman, Ordinary Differential Equations, 2nd edn. SIAM (2002).
- [65] S.N. Ethier and T.G. Kurtz, Markov Processes, Characterization and Convergence. Probability and Statistics. Wiley (2005).
- [66] N.V. Krylov, Lectures on Elliptic and Parabolic Equations in Hölder Spaces. Vol. 12 of Graduate Studies in Mathematics. American Mathematical Society, Providence, 1997.
- [67] V. Volpert, Elliptic Partial Differential Equations, Vol. 2: Reaction-Diffusion Equations. Birkhäuser (2014).



Please help to maintain this journal in open access!

This journal is currently published in open access under the Subscribe to Open model (S2O). We are thankful to our subscribers and supporters for making it possible to publish this journal in open access in the current year, free of charge for authors and readers.

Check with your library that it subscribes to the journal, or consider making a personal donation to the S2O programme by contacting subscribers@edpsciences.org.

More information, including a list of supporters and financial transparency reports, is available at https://edpsciences.org/en/subscribe-to-open-s2o.

APPENDIX A. COMPARISON OF NORMAL DERIVATIVES

In this appendix, we examine the normal derivatives of two functions that fulfill a pure Dirichlet problem and a mixed Dirichlet-Neumann problem on the boundary of axisymmetric domains. Throughout the section, $\rho > 0$ denotes the radius of either a circle or a sphere. In this section, f and g are two fixed positive-valued scalar functions defined on \mathbb{R}^2 .

A.1 The case of concentric circles

For axisymmetric case in two spatial dimensions, the Laplace equation becomes

$$\Delta u(\rho) = \frac{1}{\rho} \frac{d}{d\rho} \left(\rho \frac{du}{d\rho} \right) = 0$$
 or $\Delta u(\rho) = \frac{d}{d\rho} \left(\rho \frac{du}{d\rho} \right) = 0.$

Integrating once, we get $du(\rho)/d\rho = a/\rho$, and then again, $u = a \log \rho + b$, for some unknowns a and b.

Let $B_r := B(\mathbf{0}, r)$ be a circle with radius r > 0. Let $r^* \in (0, R)$ and consider the PDE system

$$\Delta u^* = 0 \quad \text{in } \Omega^* := B_R \setminus \overline{B}_{r^*}, \qquad u^* = f > 0 \quad \text{on } \Sigma, \qquad u^* = 0 \quad \text{on } \Gamma^* := \partial B_{r^*}.$$
 (A.1)

Then, we can compute the exact solution as

$$u^{\star}(\rho) = \frac{f \log (\rho/r^{\star})}{\log (R/r^{\star})}, \qquad \rho \in (r^{\star}, R). \tag{A.2}$$

Note that for any $\rho \in (r^*, R]$, $u(\rho)$ is positive. Now, differentiating this function with respect to ρ , we get

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \nu_R} u^{\star}(\rho) = \frac{\partial}{\partial |x|} u^{\star}(|x|) = \frac{\partial}{\partial \rho} u^{\star}(\rho) = \frac{f}{\rho \log (R/r^{\star})},\tag{A.3}$$

where ν_R is outward unit normal vector to ∂B_R . At $\rho = R$, we have

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \nu_R} u^*(R) = \frac{f}{R \log (R/r^*)}.$$

We define

$$g := \frac{f}{R \log (R/r^*)} > 0, \qquad 0 < r^* < R.$$

Let us consider Equations (2.1) and (2.2) with $\Omega = B_R \setminus \overline{B}_r$, $\Gamma = \partial B_R$, and $\Sigma = \partial B_R$, where 0 < r < R. In view of (A.2), it can easily be verified that the exact solutions to these systems of PDEs are respectively given by

$$u_{\mathrm{D}}(\rho) = \frac{f \log \left(\rho / r \right)}{\log \left(R / r \right)}$$
 and $u_{\mathrm{N}}(\rho) = \frac{f \log \left(\rho / r \right)}{\log \left(R / r^{\star} \right)}, \qquad \rho \in [r, R].$

Now, on Γ , straightforward computation of V_n gives us

$$V_{n} = -\left(\frac{\partial u_{D}}{\partial \nu} - \frac{\partial u_{N}}{\partial \nu}\right)$$

$$= -\left[\frac{f}{\log\left(R/r\right)}\left(\frac{1}{\rho}\right) - \frac{f}{\log\left(R/r^{\star}\right)}\left(\frac{1}{\rho}\right)\right]\Big|_{\rho=r}$$

$$= -\frac{f}{r\log\left(R/r\right)\log\left(R/r^{\star}\right)}\left[\log\left(R/r^{\star}\right) - \log\left(R/r\right)\right]$$

$$= -\underbrace{\frac{f}{r\log\left(R/r\right)\log\left(R/r^{\star}\right)}}_{>0}\underbrace{\left[\log\left(\frac{r}{r^{\star}}\right)\right]}_{:=L_{1}(r)}.$$

Observe that the sign of V_n only depends on the relations between r and r^* . If we want V_n to be negative, we need $L_1(r) > 0$ to be positive, and this happens when $r > r^*$.

Now, motivated by the previous discussion, we examine the existence and uniqueness of solution to the following initial value problem: for a given T > 0,

$$\begin{cases}
r'(t) = -\frac{f(\log r(t) - \log r^{\star})}{r(t)\log(R/r^{\star})(\log R - \log r(t))} =: F_1(t, r(t)), & \text{for } 0 < t < T, \\
r(0) = r_0, & r_0 > r^{\star},
\end{cases}$$
(A.4)

for some given $r_0 \in (r^*, R)$.

Given the techical assumption stated in Remark 1.3, we show – although it is trivial – that the initial value problem (A.4) admits a unique solution. We prove the existence using Peano's Theorem [64], Theorem 2.1, p. 10 and its uniqueness via Picard-Lindelöf Theorem [64], Thm. 1.1, p. 8. First, we observe that for t > 0, $0 < r^* \le r(t) < R$ (see the proof of Proposition A.2), and for T > 0, F_1 is continuous, for all $t \in [0, T]$ and $|r(t) - r_0| \le R - r^*$. Moreover, r is uniformly bounded in [0, T], and therefore, $F_1(t, r(t))$ is bounded in $[0, T] \times [r^*, R_0]$ for some $r^* < r_0 \le R_0 < R$. In fact, we see that

$$|F_1(t, r(t))| \le \frac{\|f\|_{L^{\infty}(\Sigma)}}{r^* \log(R/R_0)} =: K_0, \quad \text{for all } (t, r(t)) \in [0, T] \times [r^*, R_0].$$

By Peano's Theorem [64], Theorem 2.1, p. 10, (A.4) possesses at least one solution r = r(t) on $[0, T_0]$ where $T_0 = \min\{T, (R - r^*)/K_0\}$.

Remark A.1. The choice $T_0 = \min\{T, (R - r^*)/K_0\}$ for the existence of solution to (A.4) is natural. On the one hand, the requirement $T_0 \leq T$ is necessary. On the other hand, the requirement $T_0 < (R - r^*)/K_0$ is due to the fact that if r = r(t) is a solution of (A.4) on $t \in [0, T_0]$, then $|r'(t)| \leq K_0$ implies that $|r(t) - r_0| \leq R - r^* \leq K_0(t - 0) = K_0t$. However, we note that $|r(t) - r_0| \leq R - r^*$. Thus, we require $t \leq (R - r^*)/K_0$ so that the previous inequality holds.

To prove that the solution to (A.4) is unique, we will prove that F_1 is uniformly Lipschitz continuous with respect to r. Let us consider

$$F_1(r_j) := F_1(t, r_j(t)) = -\frac{f(\log r_j(t) - \log r^*)}{r_j(t) \log (R/r^*) (\log R - \log r_j(t))}, \quad \text{for } j = 1, 2, \text{ and } t > 0,$$

where $r^* < r_i \le R_0$ for j = 1, 2, for some $0 < R_0 < R$. Hence, we have

$$|F_{1}(r_{1}) - F_{1}(r_{2})| = \left| \frac{f(\log r_{1} - \log r^{\star})}{r_{1} \log (R/r^{\star}) (\log R - \log r_{1})} - \frac{f(\log r_{2} - \log r^{\star})}{r_{2} \log (R/r^{\star}) (\log R - \log r_{2})} \right|$$

$$\leq \frac{\|f\|_{L^{\infty}(\Sigma)}}{\log (R/r^{\star})} \left| \frac{r_{2} (\log R - \log r_{2}) (\log r_{1} - \log r^{\star}) - r_{1} (\log R - \log r_{1}) (\log r_{2} - \log r^{\star})}{r_{1} r_{2} (\log R - \log r_{1}) (\log R - \log r_{2})} \right|$$

$$=: \frac{\|f\|_{L^{\infty}(\Sigma)}}{\log (R/r^{\star})} \left| \frac{\mathsf{n}(r_{1}, r_{2})}{\mathsf{d}(r_{1}, r_{2})} \right|,$$

where

$$\begin{split} \mathsf{n}(r_1, r_2) &= (\log R) r_2 \log r_1 - r_2 \log r_1 \log r_2 - \log r^\star (\log R) r_2 + (\log r^\star) r_2 \log r_2 \\ &\quad - (\log R) r_1 \log r_2 + r_1 \log r_2 \log r_1 + \log r^\star (\log R) r_1 - (\log r^\star) r_1 \log r_1 \\ &= \log R (r_2 \log r_1 - r_1 \log r_2) - \log r_1 \log r_2 (r_2 - r_1) \\ &\quad + \log r^\star (r_2 \log r_2 - r_1 \log r_1) + \log r^\star \log R (r_1 - r_2), \\ \mathsf{d}(r_1, r_2) &= r_1 r_2 \left(\log R - \log r_1 \right) \left(\log R - \log r_2 \right). \end{split}$$

For $r_i > 0$ such that $r^* < r_i \le R_0 < R$ for j = 1, 2, the denominator d is bounded below away from zero; i.e.,

$$|\mathsf{d}(r_1, r_2)| \geqslant [r^* (\log R - \log R_0)]^2 =: K_1.$$

Now, on the other hand, we claim that $n(r_1, r_2)$ can be bounded by $|r_1 - r_2|$; that is, there exists a constant $K_2 > 0$ such that

$$|\mathbf{n}(r_1, r_2)| \leqslant K_2 |r_1 - r_2|,$$

where K_2 does not depends on r_1 and r_2 .

Let us note that

$$|\mathbf{n}(r_1, r_2)| = |\log R| |r_2 \log r_1 - r_1 \log r_2| + |\log r_1| |\log r_2| |r_2 - r_1| + |\log r^*| |r_2 \log r_2 - r_1 \log r_1| + |\log r^*| |\log R| |r_1 - r_2|.$$

We focus on proving that $|r_2 \log r_1 - r_1 \log r_2|$ can be bounded by $|r_1 - r_2|$. The rest can be shown in a similar manner. So, let us consider the function $f(r) = r \log r$. We note that f is continuous on $[r_1, r_2]$ and differentiable on (r_1, r_2) . Hence, by the mean value theorem, there exists $\bar{r} \in (r_1, r_2)$ such that

$$\log \bar{r} + 1 = \mathsf{f}'(\bar{r}) = \frac{\mathsf{f}(r_2) - \mathsf{f}(r_1)}{r_2 - r_1} = \frac{r_2 \log r_2 - r_1 \log r_1}{r_2 - r_1}, \qquad (0 < r^* < r_j \leqslant R_0 < R, \ j = 1, 2).$$

Because $r_1, r_2 > 0$, $|\log \bar{r} + 1|$ is clearly bounded and does not depend on r_1 and r_2 . Therefore, $|r_2 \log r_2 - r_1 \log r_1| = c|r_2 - r_1|$, for some constant of c > 0.

Combining the bounds on the numerator and denominator, we get

$$|f(r_2) - f(r_1)| \le \frac{K_2}{K_1} |u_1 - u_2|,$$

which shows that f(r) is uniformly Lipschitz continuous. Finally, applying Picard-Lindelöf Theorem [64], Thm. 1.1, p. 8, we deduce that the solution to (A.4) is unique.

A.2 The case of concentric spheres

For axisymmetric case in three spatial dimensions, the Laplace equation becomes

$$\Delta u(\rho) = \frac{1}{\rho^2} \frac{d}{d\rho} \left(\rho^2 \frac{du}{d\rho} \right) = 0 \quad \text{or} \quad \Delta u(\rho) = \frac{d}{d\rho} \left(\rho^2 \frac{du}{d\rho} \right) = 0.$$

Integrating once, we get $du(\rho)/d\rho = a/\rho^2$, and then again, $u(\rho) = -a/\rho + b$, for some unknowns a and b.

Let $B_r := B(\mathbf{0}, r)$ be a sphere with radius r > 0. Let $r^* \in (0, R)$ and consider again the PDE system (A.1) but with $\Omega^* := B_R \setminus \overline{B}_{r^*}$ and $\Gamma^* := \partial B_{r^*}$ described by the given spheres. Then, we can compute the exact solution as

$$u^{\star}(\rho) = \frac{fR}{R - r^{\star}} \left(1 - r^{\star} \rho^{-1} \right), \qquad \rho \in (r^{\star}, R).$$
 (A.5)

Observe that for any $\rho \in (r^*, R]$, $u(\rho)$ is positive.

Now, we differentiate u^* with respect to ρ , to obtain

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \nu_R} u^{\star}(\rho) = \frac{\partial}{\partial |x|} u^{\star}(|x|) = \frac{\partial}{\partial \rho} u^{\star}(\rho) = \frac{f}{\rho \log (R/r^{\star})}, \tag{A.6}$$

where ν_R is outward unit normal vector to ∂B_R . At $\rho = R$, we have

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \nu_R} u^\star(R) = \frac{fRr^\star}{R-r^\star} \rho^{-2} \Big|_{\rho=R} = \frac{fr^\star}{R(R-r^\star)}.$$

We define

$$g := \frac{fr^*}{R(R - r^*)} > 0, \qquad 0 < r^* < R.$$

Let us again consider Equations (2.1) and (2.2), but now in three dimensions, with $\Omega = B_R \setminus \overline{B}_r$, $\Gamma = \partial B_R$, and $\Sigma = \partial B_R$, where 0 < r < R. In view of (A.5), it can easily be shown that the exact solutions to these systems of PDEs are respectively given by

$$u_{\rm D}(\rho) = \frac{fR}{R-r} \left(1 - r\rho^{-1} \right)$$
 and $u_{\rm N}(\rho) = \frac{fRr^*}{R-r^*} \left(r^{-1} - \rho^{-1} \right), \quad \rho \in [r, R].$

Now, computing V_n on Γ yields the following

$$V_{n} = -\left(\frac{\partial u_{D}}{\partial \nu} - \frac{\partial u_{N}}{\partial \nu}\right)$$

$$= -\left[\frac{fR}{R - r}\left(\frac{r}{\rho^{2}}\right) - \frac{fRr^{\star}}{R - r^{\star}}\left(\frac{1}{\rho^{2}}\right)\right]\Big|_{\rho = r}$$

$$= -\frac{fR}{r}\left[\frac{1}{R - r} - \frac{r^{\star}}{(R - r^{\star})r}\right]$$

$$= -\frac{fR}{r}\left[\frac{(R - r^{\star})r - (R - r)r^{\star}}{r(R - r)(R - r^{\star})}\right]$$

$$= -\underbrace{\frac{fR^{2}}{r^{2}(R - r)(R - r^{\star})}\underbrace{(r - r^{\star})}_{=:L_{2}(r)}.$$

Notice that, as expected, the sign of V_n only depends on the relations between r and r^* . If we want V_n to be negative, we obviously need $L_2(r) > 0$ to be positive, and this occurs when $r > r^*$.

Similar to the previous subsection, one can prove the existence and uniqueness of solution to the following initial value problem

$$\begin{cases}
r'(t) = -\frac{fR^2(r(t) - r^*)}{r(t)^2(R - r(t))(R - r^*)} =: F_2(t, r(t)), & \text{for } 0 < t < T, \\
r(0) = r_0, & r_0 > r^*,
\end{cases}$$
(A.7)

for some given $r_0 \in (r^*, R)$. To prove that the right-hand side of (A.7) is uniformly Lipshitz continuous with respect to r, we can again apply the mean value theorem. For this purpose, we can utilize the derivative of G with respect to r given by

$$F_2'(\cdot,r) = -\frac{fR^2(2r^2 + r^*(2R - 3r) - Rr)}{r^3(R - r^*)(R - r)^2},$$

and show that this expression is bounded within the interval $[r^*, R)$.

In view of the existence of unique solution to (A.4) and (A.7), we formally have the following proposition.

Proposition A.2. The unique solutions to (A.4) and (A.7) satisfy r'(t) < 0, for all t > 0.

Proof. From previous discussion, we have deduced that V_n remains negative for $r > r^*$. We want to prove then that $r(t) \ge r^*$, for all t > 0, and we claim that $r(t) \to r^*$ as $t \to T$ where $T = \infty$. In other words, r(t) will not reach r^* in finite time. We will prove the latter claim via a contradiction. That is, we first suppose that there exists a $T < \infty$ such that $r(T) = r^*$ and show that this will lead to a contradiction.

To do this, we first comment that $F_i(\cdot, r) \in C^{\infty}(0, R)$, where F_i , i = 1, 2, are the rational functions given in (A.4) and (A.7), respectively. Hence, via Taylor expansion, we can write r' (after some transformation normalizing the coefficient) as follows

$$r'(t) = (r^{\star} - r(t))s_i(r(t)),$$

where s_i are some functions over r such that $s_i(r^*) > 0$ for i = 1, 2. The functions s_i , i = 1, 2, can be expressed in the form

$$s_i(r) = \frac{r'(t)}{r^* - r(t)} = \log\left(\frac{1}{r(t) - r^*}\right).$$

Now, if $r \in C^1([0,T]) \cap C^0([0,T])$ and $r(T) = r^*$ for $0 \le a < T - \varepsilon < T < \infty$ fo some constant a and $\varepsilon > 0$ then

$$\int_{a}^{T-\varepsilon} s_i(r(t)) \ dt = \log \left(\frac{1}{r(t) - r^*} \right) \Big|_{a}^{T-\varepsilon} = \log \left(\frac{r(a) - r^*}{r(T - \varepsilon) - r^*} \right).$$

Notice that

$$\lim_{\varepsilon \to 0} \int_{a}^{T-\varepsilon} s_i(r(t)) \ dt = \lim_{\varepsilon \to 0} \log \left(\frac{r(a) - r^*}{r(T-\varepsilon) - r^*} \right) = \infty,$$

which is a contradiction.

Appendix B. Mullins-Sekerka analysis for 2D axisymmetric domains

In this appendix, we examine the main system (1.1) on axisymmetric case in two dimension through Mullins-Sekerka analysis given that f and g are positive-valued functions. Let $r_{\Sigma} > 0$ and $\rho^0 > 0$ be given. We let the exterior (fixed) and the interior (free) boundary be defined by two concentric circles $\Sigma = \{x \in \mathbb{R}^2 \mid |x| = r_{\Sigma}\}$ and $\Gamma = \{x \in \mathbb{R}^2 \mid |x| = \rho^0\}$. We define $\Gamma^0(t) = \{x \in \mathbb{R}^2 \mid |x| = \rho^0(t)\}$, and consider, in polar coordinate (r, θ) , its perturbation given by

$$\Gamma^{\varepsilon}(t) = \{ (r, \theta) \mid r = \rho^{\varepsilon}(\theta, t) \},$$

where we suppose that ρ^{ε} formally has the expansion

$$\rho^{\varepsilon}(\theta, t) = \rho^{0}(t) + \varepsilon \rho^{1}(\theta, t) + O(\varepsilon^{2}).$$

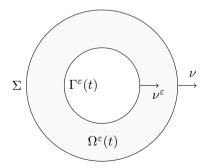


FIGURE B.1. The axisymmetric annular domain.

Here, in particular, we shall consider perturbation of the type $\rho^1(\theta,t) = R(t)\cos k\theta$ or $R(t)\sin k\theta$. Our aim is to derive a necessary condition of R(t) for $\Gamma^{\varepsilon}(t)$ satisfying our main system (1.1) with suitable $u_{\rm D}^{\varepsilon}(x,t)$ and $u_{\rm N}^{\varepsilon}(x,t)$, except for the initial condition. For simplicity, let us suppose that f and g are positive constants. We define

$$\Omega^{\varepsilon}(t) = \{ x \in \mathbb{R}^2 \mid \rho^{\varepsilon}(t) < |x| < r_{\Sigma} \}.$$

Of course, we set $\Omega^0(t) = \{x \in \mathbb{R}^2 \mid \rho^0(t) < |x| < r_{\Sigma} \}.$

We consider the following systems of PDEs:

$$\begin{cases} \Delta u_{\mathrm{D}}^{\varepsilon} = 0 & \text{in } \Omega^{\varepsilon}(t), & u_{\mathrm{D}}^{\varepsilon} = f > 0 & \text{on } \Sigma, & u_{\mathrm{D}}^{\varepsilon} = 0 & \text{on } \Gamma^{\varepsilon}(t), \\ \Delta u_{\mathrm{N}}^{\varepsilon} = 0 & \text{in } \Omega^{\varepsilon}(t), & \frac{\partial u_{\mathrm{N}}^{\varepsilon}}{\partial \nu} = g > 0 & \text{on } \Sigma, & u_{\mathrm{N}}^{\varepsilon} = 0 & \text{on } \Gamma^{\varepsilon}(t), \end{cases}$$
(B.1)

where ν is the outward unit normal vector to Σ . Accordingly, the normal velocity of the moving boundary Γ^{ε} is given by

$$v^{\varepsilon}(\theta, t) = -\left(\frac{\partial u_{\mathrm{D}}^{\varepsilon}}{\partial \nu^{\varepsilon}} - \frac{\partial u_{\mathrm{N}}^{\varepsilon}}{\partial \nu^{\varepsilon}}\right), \qquad y \in \Gamma^{\varepsilon}(t),$$

where ν^{ε} is the *inward* unit normal to $\Gamma^{\varepsilon}(t)$ (see Fig. B.1 for illustration) given by

$$\nu^{\varepsilon}(\theta,t) = \begin{pmatrix} \cos \theta \\ \sin \theta \end{pmatrix} + \varepsilon \frac{\rho_{\theta}^{1}(\theta,t)}{\rho^{0}(t)} \begin{pmatrix} \sin \theta \\ -\cos \theta \end{pmatrix} + O(\varepsilon^{2}).$$

Here, the initial geometric profile of the perturbed boundary is $\Gamma^{\varepsilon}(0) = \{(r,\theta) \mid r = \rho_0^{\varepsilon}(\theta)\}$ where $\rho_0^{\varepsilon}(\theta) = \rho_0^0 + \varepsilon \rho_0^1(\theta) + O(\varepsilon^2)$. Now, we assume that

$$u_{\mathbf{p}}^{\varepsilon}(x,t) = u_{\mathbf{p}}^{0}(x,t) + \varepsilon u_{\mathbf{p}}^{1}(x,t) + O(\varepsilon^{2}), \qquad \mathbf{p} = \mathbf{D}, \mathbf{N},$$

in a neighborhood of $\Omega^{\varepsilon}(t)$. So, for $x = \rho^{0}(t) \begin{pmatrix} \cos \theta \\ \sin \theta \end{pmatrix} \in \Gamma^{0}(t)$ and $y = \rho^{\varepsilon}(\theta, t) \begin{pmatrix} \cos \theta \\ \sin \theta \end{pmatrix} \in \Gamma^{\varepsilon}(t)$ we have, after applying Taylor's expansion and combining terms with respect to ε , the following identities

$$\begin{split} u_{\mathrm{p}}^{\varepsilon}(y,t) &= u_{\mathrm{p}}^{0}(x,t) + \varepsilon \left(u_{\mathrm{p}}^{1}(x,t) + \rho^{1}(\theta,t) \frac{\partial u_{\mathrm{p}}^{0}}{\partial r}(x,t) \right) + O(\varepsilon^{2}), \\ &= u_{\mathrm{p}}^{0}(x,t) + \varepsilon \left(u_{\mathrm{p}}^{1}(x,t) + \rho^{1}(\theta,t) \frac{\partial u_{\mathrm{p}}^{0}}{\partial r}(x,t) \right) + O(\varepsilon^{2}), \\ \frac{\partial u_{\mathrm{p}}^{\varepsilon}}{\partial \nu^{\varepsilon}}(y,t) &= \frac{\partial u_{\mathrm{p}}^{0}}{\partial r}(x,t) + \varepsilon \left(\frac{\partial u_{\mathrm{p}}^{1}}{\partial r}(x,t) + \rho^{1}(\theta,t) \frac{\partial^{2} u_{\mathrm{p}}^{0}}{\partial r^{2}}(x,t) \right) + O(\varepsilon^{2}). \end{split}$$

The equations and terms of order $O(\varepsilon^0)$ are as follows:

$$\begin{cases} \Delta u_{\rm D}^0 = 0 & \text{in } \Omega^0(0), & u_{\rm D}^0 = f & \text{on } \Sigma, & u_{\rm D}^0 = 0 & \text{on } \Gamma^0(0), \\ \Delta u_{\rm N}^0 = 0 & \text{in } \Omega^0(0), & \frac{\partial u_{\rm N}^0}{\partial \nu} = g & \text{on } \Sigma, & u_{\rm N}^0 = 0 & \text{on } \Gamma^0(0), \end{cases}$$
(B.2)

with

$$\rho_t^0(t) = -\left(\frac{\partial u_D^0}{\partial r}(x, t) - \frac{\partial u_N^0}{\partial r}(x, t)\right), \quad x \in \Gamma^0(t), \quad \text{and} \quad \rho^0(0) = \rho_0^0.$$
 (B.3)

Meanwhile, the equations and terms of order $O(\varepsilon^1)$ are as follows:

$$\begin{cases} \Delta u_{\mathrm{D}}^{1} = 0 & \text{in } \Omega^{0}(t), \\ u_{\mathrm{D}}^{1} = f & \text{on } \Sigma, \end{cases}$$

$$\begin{cases} u_{\mathrm{D}}^{1}(x,t) + \rho^{1}(\theta,t) \frac{\partial u_{\mathrm{D}}^{0}}{\partial r}(x,t) = 0 & \text{on } \Gamma^{0}(t), \\ \Delta u_{\mathrm{N}}^{1} = 0 & \text{in } \Omega^{0}(t), \end{cases}$$

$$\frac{\partial u_{\mathrm{N}}^{1}}{\partial \nu} = g & \text{on } \Sigma,$$

$$\begin{cases} u_{\mathrm{N}}^{1}(x,t) + \rho^{1}(\theta,t) \frac{\partial u_{\mathrm{N}}^{0}}{\partial r}(x,t) = 0 & \text{on } \Gamma^{0}(t), \end{cases}$$
(B.4)

with

$$\rho_t^1(\theta, t) = -\left[\left(\frac{\partial u_D^1}{\partial r}(x, t) - \frac{\partial u_N^1}{\partial r}(x, t) \right) + \left(\frac{\partial^2 u_D^0}{\partial r^2}(x, t) - \frac{\partial^2 u_N^0}{\partial r^2}(x, t) \right) \rho^1(\theta, t) \right]$$
(B.5)

and

$$\rho^1(\theta,0) = \rho_0^1(\theta)$$

Next, we compute the exact solutions to (B.2). We let

$$u_{\mathbf{p}}^{0} = C_{\mathbf{p}} \log \frac{|x|}{\rho^{0}(t)}$$
, for $\mathbf{p} = \mathbf{D}$, \mathbf{N} , where $|x| = r$.

Then, for $f(t) = C_{\rm D} \log \frac{r_{\Sigma}}{\rho^0(t)}$, we get $C_{\rm D}(t) = \frac{f(t)}{\log(r_{\Sigma}/\rho^0(t))}$. Meanwhile, for $\frac{\partial u_{\rm p}^0}{\partial \nu}\Big|_{\Sigma} = \frac{C_{\rm p}}{r_{\Sigma}} = g(t)$ at $\rm p = N$ (note here that ν is the outward unit normal to Σ), we get $C_{\rm N}(t) = g(t)r_{\Sigma}$. Therefore, we obtain the following exact solutions to (B.2):

$$u_{\rm D}^{0} = C_{\rm D}(t) \log \left(\frac{|x|}{\rho^{0}(t)}\right) = \frac{f(t)}{\log \left(\frac{r_{\Sigma}}{\rho^{0}(t)}\right)} \log \left(\frac{|x|}{\rho^{0}(t)}\right),$$
$$u_{\rm N}^{0} = C_{\rm N}(t) \log \left(\frac{|x|}{\rho^{0}(t)}\right) = g(t) r_{\Sigma} \log \left(\frac{|x|}{\rho^{0}(t)}\right),$$

which gives us

$$w^{0} := u_{\mathrm{N}}^{0} - u_{\mathrm{D}}^{0} = \left(C_{\mathrm{N}}(t) - C_{\mathrm{D}}(t)\right) \log\left(\frac{|x|}{\rho^{0}(t)}\right) = \left(g(t)r_{\Sigma} - \frac{f(t)}{\log\left(\frac{r_{\Sigma}}{\rho^{0}(t)}\right)}\right) \log\left(\frac{|x|}{\rho^{0}(t)}\right).$$

Using the above notation, and from (B.3) and (B.5), we get

$$O(\varepsilon^{0}): \begin{cases} \rho_{t}^{0}(t) = \frac{\partial w^{0}}{\partial r}(x, t), \\ \frac{\partial w^{0}}{\partial r}(x, t) \Big|_{x \in \Gamma^{0}(t)} = \frac{C_{N}(t) - C_{D}(t)}{\rho^{0}(t)}, \quad x \in \Gamma^{0}(t), \end{cases}$$
(B.6)

$$O(\varepsilon^{1}): \begin{cases} \rho_{t}^{1}(\theta, t) = \frac{\partial w^{1}}{\partial r}(x, t) + \frac{\partial^{2} w^{1}}{\partial r^{2}}(x, t)\rho^{1}(\theta, t), \\ \frac{\partial^{2} w^{0}}{\partial r^{2}}(x, t)\Big|_{x \in \Gamma^{0}(t)} = -\frac{C_{N}(t) - C_{D}(t)}{\rho^{0}(t)^{2}}, \quad x = \rho^{0}(t) \begin{pmatrix} \cos \theta \\ \sin \theta \end{pmatrix} \in \Gamma^{0}(t), \end{cases}$$
(B.7)

where

$$C_{\rm D}(t) = \frac{f(t)}{\log\left(\frac{r_{\Sigma}}{\rho^0(t)}\right)} > 0 \quad \text{and} \quad C_{\rm N}(t) = g(t)r_{\Sigma} > 0.$$
 (B.8)

Let us now suppose, as mentioned earlier, that $\rho^1(\theta,t) = R(t)\cos k\theta$, $k \in \mathbb{N}$. Then, we consider the ansatz

$$u_{\mathrm{p}}^{1} = a_{\mathrm{p}}(t)r^{k}\cos k\theta + b_{\mathrm{p}}(t)r^{-k}\cos k\theta, \qquad r = |x|, \qquad \mathrm{p} = \mathrm{D, N},$$

which leads to the equivalence

$$u_{\rm p}^1 + \rho^1 \frac{\partial u_{\rm p}^0}{\partial r} = 0 \qquad \Longleftrightarrow \qquad a_{\rm p}(t)\rho^0(t)^k + b_{\rm p}(t)\rho^0(t)^{-k} + R(t)\frac{C_{\rm p}(t)}{\rho^0(t)} = 0.$$
 (B.9)

So, for the first-order term, we have

$$w^{1} := u_{\mathrm{N}}^{1} - u_{\mathrm{D}}^{1} = \left\{ (a_{\mathrm{N}}(t) - a_{\mathrm{D}}(t))r^{k} + (b_{\mathrm{N}}(t) - b_{\mathrm{D}}(t))r^{-k} \right\} \cos k\theta,$$

$$\frac{\partial w^{1}}{\partial r}\Big|_{\Gamma^{0}(t)} = k \left\{ (a_{\mathrm{N}}(t) - a_{\mathrm{D}}(t))\rho^{0}(t)^{k-1} - (b_{\mathrm{N}}(t) - b_{\mathrm{D}}(t))\rho^{0}(t)^{-(k+1)} \right\} \cos k\theta.$$

From $(B.7)_1$ and the fact that $\rho^1(\theta,t) = R(t)\cos k\theta$, we get

$$R'(t) = \lambda_k(t)R(t),$$

where

$$\lambda_k(t) = k \left\{ (\tilde{a}_{\rm N}(t) - \tilde{a}_{\rm D}(t)) \rho^0(t)^{k-1} - (\tilde{b}_{\rm N}(t) - \tilde{b}_{\rm D}(t)) \rho^0(t)^{-(k+1)} \right\} - \frac{C_{\rm N}(t) - C_{\rm D}(t)}{\rho^0(t)^2},$$

where $\tilde{a}_{\rm p} = a_{\rm p}/R(t)$ and $\tilde{b}_{\rm p} = b_{\rm p}/R(t)$.

To get the exact form of $\lambda_k(t)$, we need to compute for the coefficients $a_D(t)$, $b_D(t)$, $a_N(t)$, and $b_N(t)$. To this end, we note the following implications of the boundary conditions

$$u_{\mathrm{D}}^{1} = 0 \quad \text{on } \Sigma \qquad \Longleftrightarrow \qquad a_{\mathrm{D}}(t)r_{\Sigma}^{k} + b_{\mathrm{D}}(t)r_{\Sigma}^{-k} = 0,$$

$$\frac{\partial u_{\mathrm{N}}^{1}}{\partial \nu} = 0 \quad \text{on } \Sigma \qquad \Longleftrightarrow \qquad a_{\mathrm{D}}(t)r_{\Sigma}^{k-1} - b_{\mathrm{D}}(t)r_{\Sigma}^{-(k+1)} = 0.$$
(B.10)

Equations (B.9) and (B.10) respectively lead to a system of equations which, upon solving, provides the forms of a_D and b_D as well as a_N and b_N . That is, we have

$$\begin{pmatrix} \rho^0(t)^k & \rho^0(t)^{-k} \\ r_\Sigma^k & r_\Sigma^{-k} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} \tilde{a}_\mathrm{D}(t) \\ \tilde{b}_\mathrm{D}(t) \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} -\frac{C_\mathrm{D}(t)}{\rho^0(t)} \\ 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

and

$$\begin{pmatrix} \rho^0(t)^k & \rho^0(t)^{-k} \\ r_{\Sigma}^{k-1} & -r_{\Sigma}^{-(k+1)} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} \tilde{a}_{\mathrm{N}}(t) \\ \tilde{b}_{\mathrm{N}}(t) \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} -\frac{C_{\mathrm{N}}(t)}{\rho^0(t)} \\ 0 \end{pmatrix},$$

which would give us

$$\begin{split} \begin{pmatrix} \tilde{a}_{\mathrm{D}}(t) \\ \tilde{b}_{\mathrm{D}}(t) \end{pmatrix} &= \frac{1}{\rho^{0}(t)^{k}r_{\Sigma}^{-k} - \rho^{0}(t)^{-k}r_{\Sigma}^{k}} \begin{pmatrix} r_{\Sigma}^{-k} & -\rho^{0}(t)^{-k} \\ -r_{\Sigma}^{k} & \rho^{0}(t)^{k} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} -\frac{C_{\mathrm{D}}(t)}{\rho^{0}(t)} \\ 0 \end{pmatrix} \\ &= \frac{1}{\det_{\mathrm{D}}^{k}(t)} \begin{pmatrix} C_{\mathrm{D}}(t) \\ \rho^{0}(t) \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} r_{\Sigma}^{-k} \\ -r_{\Sigma}^{k} \end{pmatrix}, \\ \begin{pmatrix} \tilde{a}_{\mathrm{N}}(t) \\ \tilde{b}_{\mathrm{N}}(t) \end{pmatrix} &= \frac{1}{-\rho^{0}(t)^{k}r_{\Sigma}^{-(k+1)} - \rho^{0}(t)^{-k}r_{\Sigma}^{k-1}} \begin{pmatrix} -r_{\Sigma}^{-(k+1)} & -\rho^{0}(t)^{-k} \\ -r_{\Sigma}^{k-1} & \rho^{0}(t)^{k} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} -\frac{C_{\mathrm{N}}(t)}{\rho^{0}(t)} \\ 0 \end{pmatrix} \\ &= \frac{1}{\det_{\mathrm{N}}^{k}(t)} \begin{pmatrix} g(t) \\ \rho^{0}(t) \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} r_{\Sigma}^{-k} \\ r_{\Sigma}^{k} \end{pmatrix}, \end{split}$$

where

$$\det_{\mathbf{D}}^{k}(t) = -\rho^{0}(t)^{k} r_{\Sigma}^{-k} + \rho^{0}(t)^{-k} r_{\Sigma}^{k} = \left(\frac{r_{\Sigma}}{\rho^{0}(t)}\right)^{k} - \left(\frac{\rho^{0}(t)}{r_{\Sigma}}\right)^{k},$$

$$\det_{\mathbf{N}}^{k}(t) = \rho^{0}(t)^{k} r_{\Sigma}^{-k} + \rho^{0}(t)^{-k} r_{\Sigma}^{k} = \left(\frac{\rho^{0}(t)}{r_{\Sigma}}\right)^{k} + \left(\frac{r_{\Sigma}}{\rho^{0}(t)}\right)^{k}.$$

Note that both of these determinants are positive because $\rho^0(t) < r_{\Sigma}$ for all t > 0. Moreover, we observe that

$$0 < \frac{\det_{\mathbf{N}}^{k}(t)}{\det_{\mathbf{N}}^{k}(t)} \longrightarrow 1, \qquad 0 < \frac{\det_{\mathbf{D}}^{k}(t)}{\det_{\mathbf{N}}^{k}(t)} \longrightarrow 1, \qquad \text{as } k \to \infty.$$

Then, finally, we have

$$\begin{split} \lambda_k(t) &= \frac{k}{\rho^0(t)} \left\{ \left[-\tilde{a}_{\mathrm{D}}(t) \rho^0(t)^k + \tilde{b}_{\mathrm{D}}(t) \rho^0(t)^{-k} \right] + \left[\tilde{a}_{\mathrm{N}}(t) \rho^0(t)^k - \tilde{b}_{\mathrm{N}}(t) \rho^0(t)^{-k} \right] \right\} \\ &\quad + \frac{C_{\mathrm{D}}(t) - C_{\mathrm{N}}(t)}{\rho^0(t)^2} \\ &= \frac{k}{\rho^0(t)^2} \left\{ \frac{-C_{\mathrm{D}}(t)}{\det_{\mathrm{D}}^k(t)} \left(r_{\Sigma}^{-k} \rho^0(t)^k + r_{\Sigma}^k \rho^0(t)^{-k} \right) + \frac{g(t)}{\det_{\mathrm{N}}^k(t)} \left(r_{\Sigma}^{-k} \rho^0(t)^k - r_{\Sigma}^k \rho^0(t)^{-k} \right) \right\} \\ &\quad + \frac{C_{\mathrm{D}}(t) - C_{\mathrm{N}}(t)}{\rho^0(t)^2} \\ &= -\underbrace{\frac{k}{\rho^0(t)^2} \left(C_{\mathrm{D}}(t) \frac{\det_{\mathrm{N}}^k(t)}{\det_{\mathrm{D}}^k(t)} + g(t) \frac{\det_{\mathrm{D}}^k(t)}{\det_{\mathrm{N}}^k(t)} \right)}_{>0} + \frac{C_{\mathrm{D}}(t) - C_{\mathrm{N}}(t)}{\rho^0(t)^2}. \end{split}$$

Evidently, for large enough k, $\lambda_k(t)$ is negative, for any $t \ge 0$. This implies, formally, that the main system (1.1) is well-posed in the case of annular domains formed by concentric radially symmetric shapes.

Appendix C. Change of variables

For the benefit of the reader, we provide here the computation of the transformed domain. We focus on rewriting the main equations for the variable $u_{\rm N}$ (the fourth to sixth equations in (1.1)). For the case $u_{\rm D}$, the computations are

similar. So, consider a smooth function $u_N(x,t)$, $x \in \Omega(t)$, and $U_N(y,t)$, $y \in \Omega$, where y = Y(x,t). Then, $x = Y^{-1}(y,t)$, and we have

$$u_{\rm N}(x,t) = U_{\rm N}(y,t) = u_{\rm N}(Y^{-1}(y,t),t) =: u_{\rm N} \circ Y^{-1}(y,t).$$
 (C.1)

Let us introduce the notation $x := (x_1, \dots, x_d)^{\top} \in \mathbb{R}^d$, $y := (y_1, \dots, y_d)^{\top} \in \mathbb{R}^d$, so that $Y^{-1}(y, t) := (x_1, \dots, x_d)^{\top}(y, t) \in \mathbb{R}^d$. For clarity, we shortly verify here identity (4.6).

By generalized chain rule, the mth $(m=1,\ldots,n)$ column entry of ∇_y^{\top} is computed as follows (dropping t)

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial x_m} u_{\mathrm{N}}(x) = \sum_{k=1}^d \frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial y_k}(y) \frac{\partial Y_k}{\partial x_m}(x) = \sum_{k=1}^d \frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial y_k}(y) \mathsf{J}^{km} = \sum_{k=1}^d \mathsf{J}^{km} \frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial y_k}(y).$$

We next focus on the transformation of the Laplace equation. We recall that

$$\nabla_x \cdot \nabla_x u = \Delta_x u = \left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_1^2} + \dots + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_d^2}\right) u.$$

From the relation $u_N(x,t) = U_N(y,t)$, we get $\Delta_x u_N(x,t) = \Delta_y U_N(y,t) = \nabla_y^\top \cdot \nabla_y^\top U_N(y,t)$. Each summand $\partial^2 u/\partial x_k^2$, $k = 1, \ldots, n$, is computed by performing the following calculation of partial derivatives

$$\begin{split} \frac{\partial}{\partial x_k} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x_k} u_{\rm N}(x) \right) &= \frac{\partial}{\partial x_k} \left(\sum_{p=1}^d \frac{\partial U_{\rm N}}{\partial y_p}(y) \frac{\partial Y_p}{\partial x_k}(x) \right) \\ &= \sum_{p=1}^d \left\{ \underbrace{\frac{\partial}{\partial x_k} \left(\frac{\partial U_{\rm N}}{\partial y_p}(y) \right)}_{=:D_1} \frac{\partial Y_p}{\partial x_k}(x) + \underbrace{\frac{\partial U_{\rm N}}{\partial y_p}(y)}_{=:D_2} \underbrace{\frac{\partial}{\partial x_k} \left(\frac{\partial Y_p}{\partial x_k}(x) \right)}_{=:D_2} \right\}. \end{split}$$

The partial derivative D_1 is computed as follows:

$$D_1 = \frac{\partial}{\partial x_k} \left(\frac{\partial U_N}{\partial y_p}(y) \right) = \sum_{m=1}^d \frac{\partial U_N}{\partial y_m y_p}(y) \frac{\partial Y_m}{\partial x_k}(x) = \sum_{m=1}^d \frac{\partial U_N}{\partial y_m y_p}(y) \mathsf{J}^{mk}.$$

Hence, the first summand where D_1 appears can be written as follows:

$$\sum_{p=1}^{d} \frac{\partial}{\partial x_k} \left(\frac{\partial U_N}{\partial y_p}(y) \right) \frac{\partial Y_p}{\partial x_k}(x) = \sum_{p=1}^{d} \left(\sum_{m=1}^{d} \frac{\partial U_N}{\partial y_m y_p}(y) \mathsf{J}^{mk} \right) \mathsf{J}^{pk}.$$

Now, summing k from 1 to d, and after a few rearrangements, we get

$$\sum_{k=1}^{d} \sum_{p=1}^{d} \sum_{m=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{mk} \mathsf{J}^{pk} \frac{\partial^{2} U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial y_{m} \partial y_{p}} = \sum_{m,p=1}^{d} \left(\sum_{k=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{mk} \mathsf{J}^{pk} \right) \frac{\partial^{2} U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial y_{m} \partial y_{p}}$$
$$= \sum_{m,p=1}^{d} \mathsf{A}_{mp} \frac{\partial^{2} U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial y_{m} \partial y_{p}},$$

where $A_{mp} = \sum_{k=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{mk} \mathsf{J}^{pk}$ are the entries of the matrix $A = \mathsf{J}^{-1} \mathsf{J}^{-\top}$. For the partial derivative D_2 , we have the form

$$\sum_{k,m,p=1}^d \mathsf{J}^{mp} \frac{\partial \mathsf{J}^{pk}}{\partial y_m} \frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial y_p} = \sum_{k,m,p=1}^d \frac{\partial Y_m}{\partial x_k}(x) \frac{\partial}{\partial y_m} \left(\frac{\partial Y_p}{\partial x_k}(x) \right) \frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial y_p}(y).$$

The following computations yield the above expression:

$$\begin{split} D_2 &= \frac{\partial}{\partial x_k} \left(\frac{\partial Y_p}{\partial x_k}(x) \right) \\ &= \frac{\partial}{\partial x_k} \left(\varphi \circ Y(x) \right) \quad \left(\varphi(y) := \left(\frac{\partial Y_p^{-1}}{\partial y_k}(y) \right)^{-1}, \ \Omega \ni y = Y(x,t), \ x \in \Omega(t) \right) \\ &= \sum_{m=1}^d \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial y_m} (Y(x)) \frac{\partial Y_m}{\partial x_k}(x) \\ &= \sum_{m=1}^d \mathsf{J}^{mk} \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial y_m}(y) \quad (m\text{-}k\text{: row-column entry}) \\ &= \sum_{m=1}^d \mathsf{J}^{mk} \frac{\partial}{\partial y_m} \mathsf{J}^{pk}. \end{split}$$

Inserting the above expression for D_2 in the second summand earlier above, and then summing k from 1 to d, we get

$$\begin{split} \sum_{k=1}^{d} \sum_{p=1}^{d} \frac{\partial U_{\rm N}}{\partial y_{p}}(y) \frac{\partial}{\partial x_{k}} \left(\frac{\partial Y_{p}}{\partial x_{k}}(x) \right) &= \sum_{k=1}^{d} \sum_{m=1}^{d} \sum_{p=1}^{d} \frac{\partial Y_{m}}{\partial x_{k}}(x) \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial y_{m}}(y) \frac{\partial U_{\rm N}}{\partial y_{p}}(y) \\ &= \sum_{k,m,p=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{mk} \frac{\partial \mathsf{J}^{pk}}{\partial y_{m}} \frac{\partial U_{\rm N}}{\partial y_{p}}, \end{split}$$

where $\varphi(y)$ is again defined as before. In summary, the Laplace equation $\Delta_x u_N(x,t) = 0$, $x \in \Omega(t)$, t > 0, when expressed over the fixed domain Ω , has the following form:

$$\sum_{m,p=1}^{d} \mathsf{A}_{mp} \frac{\partial^2 U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial y_m \partial y_p} + \sum_{k=m,p=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{mk} \frac{\partial \mathsf{J}^{pk}}{\partial y_m} \frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial y_p} = 0,$$

where A_{mp} is as mentioned earlier. For the Laplace equation $\Delta_x u_D(x,t) = 0$, $x \in \Omega(t)$, t > 0, simply replace U_D above.

We next perform the transformations of equations on the boundary. First, it is easy to check that $U_{\rm N}(y,t)=u_{\rm N}(Y^{-1}(y,t),t)=0,\ y\in\Gamma,\ t>0$. Similarly, on Σ , we can write $g(x,t)\ (x\in\Sigma)$ as $g(Y^{-1}(y,t),t)$. Since $\tilde{\rho}(x,t)\equiv0$ on Σ , we simply write the function $g(Y^{-1}(y,t),t)$ as g(y,t). Now, let us rewrite the expression $\nabla_x u_{\rm N}(x,t)\cdot\nu(x,t)$, where $x\in\partial\Omega(t)$, in terms of $U_{\rm N}(y,t)$ on the fixed boundary $\partial\Omega$. This is done as follows (hereafter, we occasionally drop t and write $\nu_{\circ}:=\nu_{\circ}(y)$ for convenience):

$$\nabla_x u_{\mathbf{N}}(x) \cdot \nu(x) = \mathsf{J}^{-\top} \nabla_y^{\top} U_{\mathbf{N}}(y) \cdot \frac{\mathsf{J}^{-\top} \nu_{\diamond}}{|\mathsf{J}^{-\top} \nu_{\diamond}|}(y).$$

Clearly, on the fixed (interior) boundary Σ , we have

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \nu_{\diamond}} U_{\rm N}(y,t) = g(y,t), \qquad y \in \Sigma, \ t > 0.$$

In the same manner, we obtain the following transformation of boundary conditions for the variable $u_{\rm D}$

$$U_{\rm D}(y,t) = u_{\rm D}(Y^{-1}(y,t),t) = 0, \qquad y \in \Gamma, \ t > 0,$$

and, on Σ , we can write f(x,t) $(x \in \Sigma)$ as $f(Y^{-1}(y,t),t)$. Again, because $\tilde{\rho}(x,t) \equiv 0$ on Σ , we simply write the function $f(Y^{-1}(y,t),t)$ as f(y,t). Moreover, from $\Gamma(t)$ to Γ , we have the following sequence of computations and transformations

with regards to the equation for the normal velocity

$$V_n(x,t) = \mathbf{V}(x,t) \cdot \nu(x,t) = \frac{d}{dt}x(t) \cdot \nu(x,t),$$

$$= \frac{d}{dt}\left(y + \mathbf{N}(y)\tilde{\rho}(y,t)\right) \cdot \nu(x,t)$$

$$= \frac{\partial}{\partial t}\tilde{\rho}(y,t)\mathbf{N}(y) \cdot \frac{\mathbf{J}^{-\top}\nu_0}{|\mathbf{J}^{-\top}\nu_0|}(y), \quad \left(\tilde{\rho}_t(y,t) := \frac{d}{dt}\tilde{\rho}(y,t), \ y \in \Gamma, \ t > 0\right).$$

and

$$\left(\nabla u_{\mathrm{D}}(x,t) - \nabla u_{\mathrm{N}}(x,t)\right) \cdot \nu(x,t) = \mathsf{J}^{-\top} \left(\nabla_y^\top U_{\mathrm{D}}(y) - \nabla_y^\top U_{\mathrm{N}}(y)\right) \cdot \frac{\mathsf{J}^{-\top} \nu_{\mathrm{o}}}{|\mathsf{J}^{-\top} \nu_{\mathrm{o}}|}(y),$$

for $x = x(t) \in \Gamma(t)$, $y \in \Gamma$, and t > 0. These identities, with $A := J^{-1}J^{-\top}$, gives us

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \tilde{\rho}(y,t) = -\left(\mathbf{N}(y) \cdot \mathsf{J}^{-\top} \nu_{\diamond}(y)\right)^{-1} \left(\nabla_y^{\top} U_{\mathrm{D}}(y) - \nabla_y^{\top} U_{\mathrm{N}}(y)\right) \cdot \mathsf{A} \nu_{\diamond},$$

for $y \in \Gamma$, t > 0. Taking into account the fact that $U_{\rm N}(y,t) = U_{\rm D}(y,t) = 0$ on Γ , t > 0, we can equivalently write the above equation as follows:

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\tilde{\rho}(y,t) + B_{\tilde{\rho}}\frac{\partial}{\partial \nu_{0}}\left(U_{\mathrm{D}}(y,t) - U_{\mathrm{N}}(y,t)\right) = 0, \qquad (y \in \Gamma, \ t > 0),$$

where $B_{\tilde{\rho}} := B_{\tilde{\rho}}(y) = (\mathbf{N}(y) \cdot \mathsf{J}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}(y))^{-1} (\nu_{\circ} \cdot \mathsf{A}\nu_{\circ})$. We remind that throughout the paper we shall assume that $\tilde{\rho}(y,t)$, $y \in \Gamma$, $t \in [0,T]$, is small enough so that $\mathbf{N}(y) \cdot \mathsf{J}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}(y)$ and $|\mathsf{J}^{-1}\nu_{\circ}(y)|$ are strictly positive for $y \in \Gamma$, and that the map $Y^{-1}(y,t)$ is invertible.

In the rest of the section, we look at how the transformed Laplace equation splits into the operators given in (4.9). The form of $\mathcal{L}_{\tilde{\rho}}$ is already clear, so we focus on rewriting the expression

$$\sum_{k,m,p=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{mk} \frac{\partial \mathsf{J}^{pk}}{\partial y_m} \frac{\partial U_{\mathrm{N}}}{\partial y_p}(y), \qquad (y \in \Omega), \tag{C.2}$$

in terms of $\mathbf{N}(y)$ and $\tilde{\rho}(y)$ (again, we drop the dependence of $\tilde{\rho}$ to t for convenience) to confirm the forms of $\mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}$ and $\mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}}$. From the identity $\mathsf{JJ}^{-1} = \mathsf{I}$, we have $\partial_y \mathsf{JJ}^{-1} + \mathsf{J}\partial_y \mathsf{J}^{-1} = 0$, or equivalently, $\partial_y \mathsf{J}^{-1} = -\mathsf{J}^{-1}\left(\partial_y \mathsf{J}\right) \mathsf{J}^{-1}$. We compute $\partial_y \mathsf{J}$ by differentiating the equation $\mathsf{J} = \mathsf{I} + \mathbf{N}\nabla_y^\top \tilde{\rho} + (\nabla_y^\top \mathbf{N})\tilde{\rho}$ with respect to y:

$$\partial_y \mathbf{J} = \mathbf{N} \operatorname{Hess}_y(\tilde{\rho}) + \nabla_y^\top \mathbf{N} \left(\nabla_y^\top \tilde{\rho} \right) + \operatorname{Hess}_y(\mathbf{N}) \tilde{\rho} + (\nabla_y^\top \mathbf{N}) \nabla_y^\top \tilde{\rho},$$

where $\operatorname{Hess}_y(\cdot)$ denotes the bilinear form associated with the Hessian matrix, *i.e.*, $\operatorname{Hess}_y(\tilde{\rho}) := \operatorname{Hess}_y(\tilde{\rho}(y)) = \partial_y(\nabla^\top \tilde{\rho}(y))$, $y \in \Omega$. Thus, we have

$$\partial_y \mathsf{J}^{-1} = -\mathsf{J}^{-1} \mathbf{N} \operatorname{Hess}_y(\tilde{\rho}) \mathsf{J}^{-1} - \mathsf{J}^{-1} \left[\nabla_y^\top \mathbf{N} \left(\nabla_y^\top \tilde{\rho} \right) + (\nabla_y^\top \mathbf{N}) \nabla_y^\top \tilde{\rho} + \operatorname{Hess}_y(\mathbf{N}) \tilde{\rho} \right] \mathsf{J}^{-1}.$$

The entries of the above matrix can be computed without difficulty. For instance, the matrix $-\mathbf{J}^{-1}\mathbf{N}\operatorname{Hess}_{y}(\tilde{\rho})\mathbf{J}^{-1}$ has entries (in Einstein's notation)

$$-\mathsf{J}^{pj}\left(\mathbf{N}\partial_{y_m}(\nabla^\top\tilde{\rho})\right)_{jq}\mathsf{J}^{qk} = -\mathsf{J}^{pj}\left(N_j\frac{\partial}{\partial y_m}\left(\frac{\partial\tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_m}\right)\right)\mathsf{J}^{qk}.$$

For the sake of clarity, we provide below a detailed computation of the matrix $\partial_y J^{-1}$ in terms of its entries. To start, we apply the matrix inversion lemma or the so-called Sherman–Morrison–Woodbury formula [46–48] to obtain the following identity

$$\begin{split} D_x Y(x) &= \left[D_y Y^{-1}(y) \right]^{-1} \\ &= \left[\mathbf{I} + (\nabla_y^\top \mathbf{N}) \tilde{\rho} + \mathbf{N} \nabla_y^\top \tilde{\rho} \right]^{-1}, \qquad (\mathbf{N} := \mathbf{N}(y), \ \tilde{\rho} := \tilde{\rho}(y), \ y \in \Omega), \\ &= \mathbf{I} - \left[I + (\nabla_y^\top \mathbf{N}) \tilde{\rho} + \mathbf{N} \nabla_y^\top \tilde{\rho} \right]^{-1} \left((\nabla_y^\top \mathbf{N}) \tilde{\rho} + \mathbf{N} \nabla_y^\top \tilde{\rho} \right), \\ &= \mathbf{I} - \left[D_y Y^{-1}(y) \right]^{-1} \left((\nabla_y^\top \mathbf{N}) \tilde{\rho} + \mathbf{N} \nabla_y^\top \tilde{\rho} \right), \end{split}$$

where $I := (\delta_{ij}) \in \mathbb{R}^{d \times d}$ $(i, j = 1, \dots, d)$ denotes the $d \times d$ identity matrix. The above equations mean that

$$\mathsf{J}^{-1} = \mathsf{I} - \mathsf{J}^{-1} \left((\nabla_y^\top \mathbf{N}) \tilde{\rho} + \mathbf{N} \nabla_y^\top \tilde{\rho} \right) =: \mathsf{I} - \mathsf{J}^{-1} \mathsf{M},$$

where, of course,

$$\mathsf{J}^{-1} = \left(\mathsf{J}^{ij}\right) = \left(\mathsf{J}_{ij}\right)^{-1} = \left(\delta_{ij} + N_i \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_j} + \frac{\partial N_i}{\partial y_j} \tilde{\rho}\right)^{-1}.$$

Differentiating the above equation with respect to y, we get

$$\begin{split} \partial_y \mathsf{J}^{-1} &= -\partial_y \mathsf{J}^{-1} \mathsf{M} - \mathsf{J}^{-1} \partial_y \mathsf{M} \\ \iff & \partial_y \mathsf{J}^{-1} (\mathsf{I} + \mathsf{M}) = - \mathsf{J}^{-1} \partial_y \mathsf{M} \\ \iff & \partial_y \mathsf{J}^{-1} = - \mathsf{J}^{-1} (\partial_y \mathsf{M}) (\mathsf{I} + \mathsf{M})^{-1} \\ \iff & \partial_y \mathsf{J}^{-1} = - \mathsf{J}^{-1} (\partial_y \mathsf{M}) \mathsf{J}^{-1}. \end{split}$$

We recall that the product of three matrices, say $A = (A_{ij})$, $B = (B_{ij})$, and $C = (C_{ij})$, in terms of its jm-th entry, is given by (using Einstein's notation) $(ABC)_{ij} = A_{ik}B_{kl}C_{lj}$. Therefore, $\partial_{y_i}J^{-1} = -J^{-1}(\partial_{y_i}M)J^{-1}$, i = 1, ..., d, in terms of its entries, is equivalent to

$$\begin{split} \frac{\partial}{\partial y_m} \mathsf{J}^{pk} &= -\sum_{j,q=1}^d \mathsf{J}^{pj} (\partial_{y_m} \mathsf{M})_{jq} \mathsf{J}^{qk}, \qquad (p\text{-}k\text{: row-column entry}), \\ &= -\sum_{j,q=1}^d \mathsf{J}^{pj} \frac{\partial}{\partial y_m} \left(\frac{\partial N_j}{\partial y_q} \tilde{\rho} + N_j \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_q} \right) \mathsf{J}^{qk} \\ &= -\sum_{j,q=1}^d \mathsf{J}^{pj} \left(\frac{\partial^2 N_j}{\partial y_m \partial y_q} \tilde{\rho} + \frac{\partial N_j}{\partial y_q} \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_m} + \frac{\partial N_j}{\partial y_m} \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_q} + N_j \frac{\partial^2 \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_m \partial y_q} \right) \mathsf{J}^{qk}. \end{split}$$

Inserting the above expression to (C.2), we get the equivalent sum

$$-\sum_{k,m,p=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{mk} \left\{ \sum_{j,q=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{pj} \left(\frac{\partial^{2} N_{j}}{\partial y_{m} \partial y_{q}} \tilde{\rho} + \frac{\partial N_{j}}{\partial y_{q}} \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_{m}} + \frac{\partial N_{j}}{\partial y_{m}} \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_{q}} \right) \mathsf{J}^{qk} \right\} \frac{\partial U_{N}}{\partial y_{p}}$$
$$-\sum_{k,m,p=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{mk} \left(\sum_{j,q=1}^{d} \mathsf{J}^{pj} N_{j} \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_{m} \partial y_{q}} \mathsf{J}^{qk} \right) \frac{\partial U_{N}}{\partial y_{p}} \ (=: S_{1} + S_{2}).$$

To get the desired expression (C.2) (with the same notation on indices), we simply interchange the indices k and m in S_1 , and for S_2 , we apply the change of notations on indices: $k \leftarrow j$, $j \leftarrow p$, $p \leftarrow q$, and note that $A_{mp} = \sum_{k=1}^{d} J^{mk} J^{pk}$. The resulting expression with these changes in notations finally provides the desired expansion of (C.2) given in (4.9) from which the forms of the operators $\mathcal{K}_{\tilde{\rho}}$ and $\mathcal{M}_{\tilde{\rho}}$ are made clear.

Appendix D. Computations of $\delta A^{(0)}$ and δB_0

In this appendix, we compute the variations $\delta A^{(0)}$ and δB_0 for the more general variation

$$\delta \mathcal{F}_{\rho_0} = \left. \frac{d}{d\lambda} \mathcal{F}_{\rho_0 + \lambda(\tilde{\rho} - \rho_0)} \right|_{\lambda = 0},$$

where, basically, $\rho_0(y,0) = 0$, $y \in \Sigma$, and $\rho_0(y,0) = 0$, $y \in \Gamma$ (see [14], Sect. 2). In our case, $\rho_0 \equiv 0$. For convenience, let us first recall that the Jacobi matrix J has entries given by

$$\mathsf{J}_{km} = \delta_{km} + N_k \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_m} + \frac{\partial N_k}{\partial y_m} \tilde{\rho},$$

and that J^{km} are, on the other hand, the entries of the inverse matrix J^{-1} which is the Jacobi matrix of the transform Y(x,t), and that $J^{-\top} = (J^{-1})^{\top}$. Here, $\delta A^{(0)} = J_0^{-1}J_0^{-\top}$, $J_0 = J\big|_{\tilde{\rho}=\tilde{\rho}_0}$, where $\tilde{\rho}_0$ satisfies the PDE system given by (4.4) with $\tilde{\rho}_0(y,0) = 0$. Moreover, we recall the entries $A_{mp} := \sum_{k=1}^d J^{mk}J^{pk}$ of the matrix $A := J^{-1}J^{-\top}$. We shall express δA in terms of δJ , and the computation of $\delta A^{(0)}$ goes as follows. First, we note that, from the identity $J_0J_0^{-1} = I$, we get $\delta (J_0J_0^{-1}) = J_0(\delta J_0^{-1}) + (\delta J_0)J_0^{-1} = 0$. So, $\delta J_0^{-1} = -J_0^{-1}(\delta J_0)J_0^{-1}$. Hence, we have the following sequence of identities (the index 0 is dropped)

$$\begin{split} \delta \mathsf{A} &= \delta (\mathsf{J}^{-1}\mathsf{J}^{-\top}) = \mathsf{J}^{-1}(\delta \mathsf{J}^{-1})^\top + (\delta \mathsf{J}^{-1})\mathsf{J}^{-\top} \\ &= \mathsf{J}^{-1}[-\mathsf{J}^{-\top}(\delta \mathsf{J})^\top \mathsf{J}^{-\top}] + [-\mathsf{J}^{-1}(\delta \mathsf{J})\mathsf{J}^{-1}]\mathsf{J}^{-\top} \\ &= -\mathsf{A}(\delta \mathsf{J})^\top \mathsf{J}^{-\top} - \mathsf{J}^{-1}(\delta \mathsf{J})\mathsf{A}. \end{split}$$

Here,

$$\delta \mathsf{J} = \left. \frac{d}{d\lambda} \left\{ \delta_{km} + N_k \frac{\partial (\lambda \tilde{\rho})}{\partial y_m} + \frac{\partial N_k}{\partial y_m} (\lambda \tilde{\rho}) \right\} \right|_{\lambda = 0} = N_k \frac{\partial \tilde{\rho}}{\partial y_m} + \frac{\partial N_k}{\partial y_m} \tilde{\rho}.$$

So,

$$\delta \mathsf{A} = -\mathsf{A}(\nabla \otimes (\mathbf{N}\tilde{\rho}))\mathsf{J}^{-\top} - \mathsf{J}^{-1}(\nabla \otimes (\mathbf{N}\tilde{\rho}))^{\top}\mathsf{A},$$

or, in terms of its entries,

$$\delta \mathsf{A}_{ij}^{(0)} = -\sum_{k,m=1} \left(\mathsf{A}_{ik}^{(0)} \frac{\partial (N_m \tilde{\rho})}{\partial y_k} \mathsf{J}_0^{jm} + \mathsf{J}_0^{im} \frac{\partial (N_m \tilde{\rho})}{\partial y_k} \mathsf{A}_{mj}^{(0)} \right).$$

Next, let us compute the variation δB_0 . To do so, let us first compute the variations $\delta(\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ})$ and $\delta\left(\mathbf{A}^{(0)}\nu_{\circ}/(\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ})\right)$, and note that $\delta\mathbf{N} \perp \nu_{\circ}$ and $\mathbf{N} \perp \delta\nu_{\circ}$:

$$\begin{split} \delta(\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}) &= \delta \mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ} + \mathbf{N} \cdot \left(\delta \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ} + \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \delta \nu_{\circ} \right) \\ &= \left(-\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-1} (\delta \mathbf{J}) \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-1} \right) \nu_{\circ}^{\top} \mathbf{N} \\ &= -\sum_{i,k,m,j=1} \mathbf{J}_{0}^{ki} \nu_{0k} \frac{\partial (N_{i} \tilde{\rho})}{\partial y_{j}} \mathbf{J}_{0}^{jm} N_{m} \\ &= -\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ} \cdot \left(\nabla \otimes \left(\mathbf{N} \tilde{\rho} \right) \right)^{\top} \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-1} \mathbf{N}. \end{split}$$

Therefore, we have the following computations

$$\begin{split} \delta\left(\frac{A^{(0)}\nu_{\circ}}{\mathbf{N}\cdot\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ}}\right) &= \frac{\delta A^{(0)}\nu_{\circ}}{\mathbf{N}\cdot\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ}} - A^{(0)}\nu_{\circ}\frac{\delta(\mathbf{N}\cdot\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ})}{(\mathbf{N}\cdot\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ})^{2}} \\ &= \frac{\left[-A^{(0)}(\nabla\otimes(\mathbf{N}\tilde{\rho}))\mathsf{J}_{0}^{-\top} - \mathsf{J}_{0}^{-1}(\nabla\otimes(\mathbf{N}\tilde{\rho}))^{\top}A^{(0)}\right]\nu_{\circ}}{\mathbf{N}\cdot\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ}} \\ &\quad + A^{(0)}\nu_{\circ}\frac{\mathsf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ}\cdot(\nabla\otimes(\mathbf{N}\tilde{\rho}))^{\top}\mathsf{J}_{0}^{-1}\mathbf{N}}{(\mathbf{N}\cdot\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ})^{2}} \\ &= -A^{(0)}\nabla\tilde{\rho} - \mathsf{J}_{0}^{-1}\mathbf{N}\frac{A^{(0)}\nu_{\circ}\cdot\nabla\tilde{\rho}}{\mathbf{N}\cdot\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ}} + A^{(0)}\nu_{\circ}\frac{\mathsf{J}_{0}^{-1}\mathbf{N}\cdot\nabla\tilde{\rho}}{\mathbf{N}\cdot\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ}} \\ &\quad + \left[-\frac{A^{(0)}(\nabla\otimes\mathbf{N})\mathsf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ}}{\mathbf{N}\cdot\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ}} - \frac{\mathsf{J}_{0}^{-1}(\nabla\otimes\mathbf{N})^{\top}A^{(0)}\nu_{\circ}}{\mathbf{N}\cdot\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ}} \\ &\quad + \frac{A^{(0)}\nu_{\circ}}{(\mathbf{N}\cdot\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ})^{2}}\left(\mathsf{J}_{0}^{-\top}\nu_{\circ}\cdot(\nabla\otimes\mathbf{N})^{\top}\mathsf{J}_{0}^{-1}\mathbf{N}\right)\right]\tilde{\rho}. \end{split}$$

Now, from (4.8), we recall that

$$B_{\tilde{\rho}} := B_{\tilde{\rho}}(y) = \left(\mathbf{N}(y) \cdot \mathsf{J}_0^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}(y) \right)^{-1} \left(\nu_{\circ}(y) \cdot \mathsf{A} \nu_{\circ}(y) \right), \qquad y \in \Gamma.$$

So, we have the following calculations

$$\begin{split} \delta \left(\frac{\nu_{\circ} \cdot \mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nu_{\circ}}{\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}} \right) &= -\nu_{\circ} \cdot \mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nabla \tilde{\rho} - \nu_{\circ} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-1} \mathbf{N} \frac{\mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nu_{\circ} \cdot \nabla \tilde{\rho}}{\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}} + \nu_{\circ} \cdot \mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nu_{\circ} \frac{\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-1} \mathbf{N} \cdot \nabla \tilde{\rho}}{\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}} \\ &+ \left[-\frac{\mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nu_{\circ} \cdot (\nabla \otimes \mathbf{N})^{\top} \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}}{\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}} - \frac{\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-1} \nu_{\circ} \cdot (\nabla \otimes \mathbf{N})^{\top} \mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nu_{\circ}}{\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}} \right. \\ &+ \frac{\nu_{\circ} \cdot \mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nu_{\circ}}{\left(\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ} \right)^{2}} \left(\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ} \cdot (\nabla \otimes \mathbf{N})^{\top} \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-1} \mathbf{N} \right) \right] \tilde{\rho} \\ &= -2 \mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nu_{\circ} \cdot \nabla \tilde{\rho} - \frac{\left(\nu_{\circ} \cdot \mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nu_{\circ}\right)}{\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}} \mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nabla \tilde{\rho} \\ &+ \left[-\frac{\mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nu_{\circ} \cdot (\nabla \otimes \mathbf{N})^{\top} \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}}{\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}} - \frac{\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-1} \nu_{\circ} \cdot (\nabla \otimes \mathbf{N})^{\top} \mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nu_{\circ}}{\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}} \right. \\ &+ \frac{\nu_{\circ} \cdot \mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nu_{\circ}}{\left(\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ} \right)^{2}} \left(\mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ} \cdot (\nabla \otimes \mathbf{N})^{\top} \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-1} \mathbf{N} \right) \right] \tilde{\rho} \\ &= :: -2 \mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nu_{\circ} \cdot \nabla \tilde{\rho} - \frac{\left(\nu_{\circ} \cdot \mathbf{A}^{(0)} \nu_{\circ}\right)}{\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nu_{\circ}} \mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{J}_{0}^{-\top} \nabla \tilde{\rho} + h(\mathbf{N}, \partial_{y} \mathbf{N}) \tilde{\rho}. \end{split}$$

Appendix E. Lemmata Proofs

For the benefit of the reader, we will prove some of the lemmas used in the paper here.

E.1 Proof of Lemma 2.5

In the proof we require a simple matrix inequality. For $A = (a_{ij}) \in \mathbb{R}^{d \times d}$, we define $||A|| = \sqrt{\sum_{i,j=1}^d a_{ij}^2}$ (i.e., $||\cdot||$ denotes the usual entry-wise matrix norm). Then, for $A, B \in \mathbb{R}^{d \times d}$, we have

$$\|\mathsf{AB}\|^2 = \sum_{i=1}^d \sum_{j=1}^d \left(\sum_{k=1}^d a_{ik} b_{kj} \right)^2 \leqslant \sum_{i=1}^d \sum_{j=1}^d \left(\sum_{k=1}^d a_{ik}^2 \right) \left(\sum_{k=1}^d b_{kj}^2 \right) = \|\mathsf{A}\|^2 \|\mathsf{B}\|^2.$$

So, $\|AB\| \le \|A\| \|B\|$.

Proof of Lemma 2.5. Let $k \in \mathbb{N}$, $\alpha \in [0,1)$, and $\phi \in C_0^{k+\alpha}(\Omega)$. Since $\phi \in C_0^{k+\alpha}(\mathbb{R}^d)$, we consider the case $\Omega = \mathbb{R}^d$ without loss of generality. To show that $\varphi \in \text{Diffeo}^{k+\alpha}(\Omega,\Omega)$, we need to prove the following:

- (i) φ is injective;
- (ii) φ is surjective;
- (iii) $\det(\nabla^{\top}\varphi) \neq 0$ for $x \in \overline{\Omega}$.

Let us prove that φ is injective. That is, for every $x, y \in \Omega$ such that $\varphi(x) = \varphi(y)$, we have x = y. So, let us suppose that $x + \phi(x) = y + \phi(y)$. Then, we have the following sequence of computations:

$$|x - y| = |\phi(y) - \phi(x)| = \left| \int_0^1 \frac{d}{dt} \left[\phi(x + t(y - x)) \right] dt \right|$$
$$= \left| \int_0^1 \left[\nabla^\top \phi(x + t(y - x)) \right] (y - x) dt \right|$$
$$\leqslant \int_0^1 \left\| \nabla^\top \phi(x + t(y - x)) \right\| |y - x| dt.$$

Because $\max_{x \in \overline{\Omega}} \|\nabla^{\top} \phi(x)\| < 1$, then there exists $\varepsilon_{\star} > 0$ such that $\|\nabla^{\top} \phi(x + t(y - x))\| \leqslant \varepsilon_{\star} < 1$. Hence,

$$|x-y| = |\phi(y) - \phi(x)| \leqslant \varepsilon_\star \int_0^1 |y-x| \ dt = \varepsilon_\star |y-x|.$$

This implies that $(1 - \varepsilon_{\star}) |y - x| = 0$, or equivalently, y = x. This proves the injectivity of φ .

Next let us prove that φ is surjective. That is, for every $y \in \mathbb{R}^d$, there exists $x \in \mathbb{R}^d$ such that $\varphi(x) = y$. Let us define the map $T_y : \mathbb{R}^d \to \mathbb{R}^d$ where $T_y(x) := y - \phi(x)$. We want to solve the equation $T_y(x) = x$. Note that

$$|T_u(x) - T_u(z)| = |\phi(x) - \phi(z)| \leqslant \varepsilon_{\star} |x - z|.$$

Because $\varepsilon_{\star} < 1$, then by Contraction Mapping Theorem, there exists an $x \in \mathbb{R}^d$ such that $x = T_y(x)$. This holds for arbitrary $y \in \mathbb{R}^d$, proving the surjectivity of φ .

Lastly, let us show that $\det(\nabla^{\top}\varphi) \neq 0$ in \mathbb{R}^d . Note that $\nabla^{\top}\varphi = \mathsf{I} + \nabla^{\top}\phi$, where $\mathsf{I} = \mathsf{I}(x) = x$ is the identity matrix/operator. If $\|\nabla^{\top}\phi(x)\| < 1$, then $\det(\mathsf{I} + \nabla^{\top}\phi) \neq 0$. Let $\mathsf{A}(x) := \nabla^{\top}\phi(x)$, $\mathsf{A} \in C^0(\overline{\Omega}, \mathbb{R}^d)$, $\|\mathsf{A}(x)\| \leq \varepsilon_{\star} < 1$, for all $x \in \overline{\Omega}$, and $\mathsf{B}_n(x) := \sum_{k=0}^n (-\mathsf{A}(x))^k$, $\mathsf{B}_n \in C^0(\overline{\Omega}; \mathbb{R}^{d \times d})$ and $\mathsf{B}(x) := \sum_{k=0}^\infty (-\mathsf{A}(x))^k$. Hence,

$$\|\mathsf{B}_n(x)\| \leqslant \sum_{k=0}^n \|\mathsf{A}(x)\|^k \leqslant \sum_{k=0}^n \varepsilon_{\star}^k = \frac{1-\varepsilon_{\star}^{n+1}}{1-\varepsilon_{\star}} \leqslant \frac{1}{1-\varepsilon_{\star}},$$

and $\{B_n\}$ is a Cauchy sequence in $C^0(\overline{\Omega}; \mathbb{R}^{d \times d})$ and $B(x) = \lim_{n \to \infty} B_n(x)$. Therefore, $B \in C^0(\overline{\Omega}; \mathbb{R}^{d \times d})$ and $\lim_{n \to \infty} B_n = B$ in $C^0(\overline{\Omega}; \mathbb{R}^{d \times d})$. These arguments show that $B(x) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (-A(x))^n$ uniformly converges in $\overline{\Omega}$ where $B \in C^0(\overline{\Omega}; \mathbb{R}^{d \times d})$ and $B(x) = (I + A(x))^{-1}$.

Now, it follows that,

$$(I + A(x))B(x) = \lim_{n \to \infty} (I + A(x))B_n(x) = \lim_{n \to \infty} (I - (-A(x))^{n+1}) = I,$$

or equivalently, $\mathsf{I} + \mathsf{A}(x) = \mathsf{B}^{-1}(x)$, for all $x \in \overline{\Omega}$. Taking the determinant of both sides of this equation, together with the matrix inequality, we deduce that $\det(\nabla^{\top}\varphi) \neq 0$ in \mathbb{R}^d .

To conclude that $\det(\nabla^{\top}\varphi) > 0$ in \mathbb{R}^d . We argue as follows. Consider the set $\mathcal{O} := \{A \in \mathbb{R}^{d \times d} \mid ||A|| < 1\}$. Clearly, \mathcal{O} is a connected convex open set. Let us define $F(A) := \det(I + A)$. We already prove that $F(A) \neq 0$ for all $A \in \mathcal{O}$ and $F \in C^0(\mathcal{O}; \mathbb{R})$. Evidently, the zero matrix $O \in \mathcal{O}$ and $F(O) = \det I = 1$. Hence, it follows that F(A) > 0, for all $A \in \mathcal{O}$, as desired.

To finish the proof, let us note that, for every $x \in \Omega$, we have $\varphi(x) \in \Omega$. Indeed, if $y = \varphi(x) \in \Omega^c$, we have $\Omega \ni x = \varphi^{-1}(y) = y \in \Omega^c$, which is a contradiction. This concludes the proof.

E.2 Proof of Lemma 4.2

Proof of Lemma 4.2. We first show that for any $y \in \overline{\Omega}$, we have that $Z(y) \in \overline{\Omega(\rho)}$. We prove this by contradiction. So, suppose the statement is not true, then there is a point $y_a \in \Omega$ such that $Z(y_a) \in \Gamma(\rho) \cup \Sigma$, $\Gamma(\rho) = S(\rho)$ for sufficiently small $\rho > 0$ (i.e., $\|\rho\|_{C^{2+\alpha}(\Gamma)} < \varepsilon$ where $0 < \varepsilon \ll 1$). We have the following situations:

- (i) there is a point $z_a \in \Omega$ such that $Z(z_a) \in \Omega(\rho)$;
- (ii) there is a point $z_b \in \overline{\Omega}$ such that $Z(z_b) \not\in \overline{\Omega(\rho)}$;
- (iii) there exists a curve $C(z_a, z_b)$ such that $C(z_a, z_b) \setminus \{z_b\} \subset \Omega$;
- (iv) there is a point $y_a \in \Omega \cap \mathcal{C}(z_a, z_b)$ such that $Z(y_a) \in \Gamma(\rho) \cup \Sigma$.

However, we can find a point $y_b \in \Gamma \cup \Sigma$ such that $Z(y_b) = Z(y_a)$ because Z is a $C^{2+\alpha}$ -diffeomorphism from $\partial\Omega$ onto $\partial\Omega(\rho)$. But, as we shall show next, the map is injective, *i.e.*, we have that $y_b = y_a$, a contradiction.

Now, let us verify that the map is one-to-one. We need to show that for any point $y_a, y_b \in \overline{\Omega}$ such that $Z(y_b) = Z(y_a)$, it must be that $y_b = y_a$. Let us note that for any pair of points $y_a, y_b \in \overline{\Omega}$, there exists a curve $C(y_a, y_b) \subset \overline{\Omega}$ of class C^1 such that $|C(y_a, y_b)| \leq c(\Omega)|y_b - y_a|$, for some constant $c(\Omega) > 0$. Hence, the equation $Z(y_b) = Z(y_a)$ implies that $y_b + \mathbf{N}(y_b)\tilde{\rho}(y_b) = y_a + \mathbf{N}(y_a)\tilde{\rho}(y_a)$, and we get the inequality

$$|y_b - y_a| = |\mathbf{N}(y_b)\tilde{\rho}(y_b) - \mathbf{N}(y_a)\tilde{\rho}(y_a)| \leqslant c(\Omega) \max_{y \in \overline{\Omega}} |\nabla(\mathbf{N}(y)\tilde{\rho}(y))| |y_b - y_a|.$$

By successively applying the inequality, we will get $|y_b - y_a| = 0$, or equivalently, $y_b = y_a$. This completes the proof of the lemma.

E.3 Proof of Lemma 7.2

Proof of Lemma 7.2. The existence result follows from [58], Section 3, Theorem 4, p. 1270, where the general linear problem with the time-derivative in the boundary condition was studied. We emphasize that the assumption of the negativity of b_{\perp} is an essential condition in the existence proof presented in [58] (see Eq. (3.4)). This same assumption also serves as a crucial requirement in the proofs of Theorems 4.2 and 5.2 in [16] (see Rem. 4.3).

For the proof of the *a priori* estimate (7.4) we apply Schauder's method. That is, using the estimate for the solution to the corresponding model problem in a half-space [49], Chapter 3, Section 2, one first obtain an estimate of the form

$$\|\Theta\|_{\overline{\Omega}, \Gamma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \le c \left(|\Theta|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{(2)} + |\psi_2|_{\Sigma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + |\Theta|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} + |\psi_1|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} \right),$$

for some constant c > 0. Here we apply the interpolation inequality (see, e.g., [49], Eq. (2.1), p. 117 or [42], Chap. 6, Sect. 8)

$$|u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2)} \leqslant \varepsilon_1 \sum_{|k|=2} |D^k u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(\alpha)} + c_{\varepsilon_1} \max_{\overline{\Omega}} |u|, \qquad (E.1)$$

where $\varepsilon_1 > 0$ is an arbitrary small number and $c_{\varepsilon_1} \to \infty$ as $\varepsilon_1 \to 0$, to $|\Theta|^{(2)}_{\overline{\Omega}}$. We take ε_1 small enough so that we will get an estimate of the form

$$\|\Theta\|_{\overline{\Omega}, \Gamma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \le c \left(|\Theta|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} + |\psi_1|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} + |\psi_2|_{\Sigma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)} + |\Theta|_{\overline{\Omega}; [0,t]}^{\infty} \right). \tag{E.2}$$

Now, to get further with our computation, we note the following equalities for $u \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})$:

$$\begin{cases} |u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(1+\alpha)} = \sum_{|j|<1+\alpha} \max_{\overline{\Omega}} \left| D^{j} u(x) \right| + [u]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(1+\alpha)} \\ = \max_{\overline{\Omega}} |u| + \sum_{|j|=1} \max_{\overline{\Omega}} \left| D^{j} u(x) \right| + \sum_{|j|=1} \max_{x,\hat{x} \in \overline{\Omega}} \frac{\left| D^{j} u(x) - D^{j} u(y) \right|}{|x-y|^{\alpha}} \\ [Du]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(\alpha)} = \sum_{|j|=[\alpha]} \max_{x,\hat{x} \in \overline{\Omega}} \frac{\left| D^{j+1} u(x) - D^{j+1} u(y) \right|}{|x-y|^{\alpha-[\alpha]}} \\ = \sum_{|j|=[1+\alpha]} \max_{x,\hat{x} \in \overline{\Omega}} \frac{\left| D^{j} u(x) - D^{j} u(y) \right|}{|x-y|^{1+\alpha-[1+\alpha]}} \\ \equiv [u]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(1+\alpha)}. \end{cases}$$
(E.3)

In above equalities, we apply the interpolation inequalities (see [49], Eq. (2.1), p. 117)

$$[Du]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(\alpha)} \leqslant \varepsilon_2 |u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2)} + c_{\varepsilon_2} |u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)} \quad \text{and} \quad [u]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(\alpha)} \leqslant \varepsilon_3 |u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(1)} + c_{\varepsilon_3} |u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)}, \tag{E.4}$$

together with (E.1) to get an estimate for $|\Theta|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)}$. We choose small enough values for $\varepsilon_2 > 0$ and $\varepsilon_3 > 0$ such that the right-hand side of the inequality (E.2) contains only the norms of known functions and the quantity $\max_{\overline{\Omega}} |\Theta(\cdot, \tau)|$. Since Θ is harmonic in Ω , we can then apply the maximum principle (see, e.g., [50], Chap. I.3, III, p. 7) on the aforesaid norm to obtain

$$|\Theta|_{\overline{\Omega};\,[0,t]}^{\infty}\leqslant |\psi_2|_{\Sigma;\,[0,t]}^{\infty}+|\Theta|_{\Gamma;\,[0,t]}^{\infty}\,.$$

We next estimate $|\Theta|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{\infty}$. Applying the fundamental theorem of calculus, together with the homogenous initial condition for the function $\Theta|_{\Gamma}$, we get

$$|\Theta|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{\infty} = \max_{0 \leqslant \tau \leqslant t} \max_{\Gamma} \left| \int_{0}^{\tau} \frac{\partial}{\partial s} \Theta(\cdot, s) ds \right| \leqslant \int_{0}^{t} \max_{\Gamma} \left| \frac{\partial}{\partial s} \Theta(\cdot, s) \right| ds. \tag{E.5}$$

Inserting this estimate to (E.2), and letting $\Psi(t) = |\psi_1|_{\Gamma; [0,t]}^{(1+\alpha)} + |\psi_2|_{\Sigma; [0,t]}^{(2+\alpha)}$, leads to

$$\|\Theta\|_{\overline{\Omega}, \Gamma; [0, t]}^{(2+\alpha)} \le c \left(\Psi(t) + \int_0^t \max_{\Gamma} \left| \frac{\partial}{\partial s} \Theta(\cdot, s) \right| ds \right). \tag{E.6}$$

Because $\Psi(t)$ is non-negative, then we may apply Grönwall's inequality (see, e.g., [65], Appendix. 5.1, p. 498) to (E.6) deducing the desired estimate (7.4).

E.4 Proof of Lemma 8.1

Proof of Lemma 8.1. For some $\alpha \in (0,1)$, let $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ be an open, connected, bounded set of class $C^{2+\alpha}$ and $u \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{\Omega})$. Then, Ω satisfies the *cone* condition and, in particular, the *(interior/exterior) ball* condition. Let us suppose that, in

specific, Ω has cone property with the cone having the opening angle $\hat{\theta} := \hat{\theta}(\Omega)$ and height h. To prove estimates (8.1) and (8.2), it is enough to show that the following inequalities are true:

$$[u]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(1)} \leqslant \varepsilon^{1+\alpha} [u]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{c_7}{\varepsilon} |u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)}, \tag{E.7}$$

$$[u]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2)} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\alpha} [u]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{c_8}{\varepsilon^2} |u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)}. \tag{E.8}$$

We will only verify in detail inequality (E.8), but (E.7) can be shown in a similar fashion. To this end, let us consider another cone $C_1 := C_1(\hat{\theta}, 1)$ with the same opening angle, but with cone height equal to 1. Using the interpolation inequality (E.15) (with $\varepsilon = 1$) in Lemma E.1, we get

$$[u]_{\mathcal{C}_1}^{(2)} \leq [u]_{\mathcal{C}_1}^{(2+\alpha)} + c(d,\hat{\theta}) |u|_{\mathcal{C}_1}^{(0)},$$
 (E.9)

for any function $u \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{C}_1)$, where $c(d,\hat{\theta}) > 0$ is a constant that depends on d and $\hat{\theta}$. To get the desired coefficients in the inequality condition, we observe that for any constant $\tilde{\mu} > 0$ and function $\tilde{u}(\tilde{x}) = u(\tilde{\mu}x)$ we have the equality

$$\left[\tilde{u}\right]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(l)} = \tilde{\mu}^{l}\left[u\right]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(l)},\tag{E.10}$$

for all $0 \le l \le 2 + \alpha$. So, for $u \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{C}_{\varepsilon})$, where the cone $C_{\varepsilon} := C_{\varepsilon}(\hat{\theta}, \varepsilon)$ with its vertex at the origin, we apply the change of variables $\tilde{x} = x/\varepsilon$, $0 < \varepsilon \le h$, and consider the function $\tilde{u}(\tilde{x}) = u(\varepsilon \tilde{x}) = u(x)$. Obviously, $\tilde{u} \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{C}_1)$, and (E.9) also holds for \tilde{u} . Applying identity (E.10) to our case, we get

$$[\tilde{u}]_{\mathcal{C}_{\varepsilon}}^{(2)} \leqslant [\tilde{u}]_{\mathcal{C}_{\varepsilon}}^{(2+\alpha)} + \tilde{c}(d,\hat{\theta})|\tilde{u}|_{\mathcal{C}_{\varepsilon}}^{(0)} \iff [u]_{\mathcal{C}_{\varepsilon}}^{(2)} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\alpha}[u]_{\mathcal{C}_{\varepsilon}}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{\tilde{c}(d,\hat{\theta})}{\varepsilon^{2}}|u|_{\mathcal{C}_{\varepsilon}}^{(0)},$$
 (E.11)

for some constant $\tilde{c}(d,\hat{\theta}) > 0$. Now, note that for any $x \in \Omega \in C^{2+\alpha}$, we can construct a cone C_{ε} with vertex x and such that $C_{\varepsilon} \subset \Omega$. Hence, using (E.11), we can further get the estimate

$$[u]_{\mathcal{C}_{\varepsilon}}^{(2)} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\alpha} [u]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{\tilde{c}}{\varepsilon^{2}} |u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)}.$$

Because $x \in \Omega$ is taken arbitrarily, we conclude that

$$[u]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2)} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\alpha} [u]_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{c_7}{\varepsilon^2} |u|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(0)},$$

for some constant $c_7 > 0$, proving (E.8). Using the definition of the norm $|\cdot|_{\overline{\Omega}}^{(l)}$, we finally recover inequality (8.2). The other interpolation inequality (E.7) from which (8.1) relies can be shown in a similar manner as above with the help of the interpolation inequality (E.14) in Lemma E.1 (stated in the Sect. E.5 below).

E.5 Interpolation inequalities

We justify in this subsection the interpolation inequalities used to proved Lemma 8.1. Similar and more general interpolation inequalities are given and proved in [42], Section 6.8, pp. 130–136 (see also [53], Cor. 5.3.4, p. 144 for analogous results).

Lemma E.1. Let B_r be a ball in \mathbb{R}^d with radius r and consider a function $u \in C^{1+\alpha}(\overline{B}_r)$, $\alpha \in (0,1)$. For any real number $\varepsilon \in (0,r]$, the following inequalities hold:

$$[u]_{B_r}^{(1)} \le \varepsilon^{\alpha} [u]_{B_r}^{(1+\alpha)} + \frac{c_d}{\varepsilon} |u|_{B_r}^{(0)},$$
 (E.12)

$$[u]_{B_r}^{(\alpha)} \le \varepsilon[u]_{B_r}^{(1+\alpha)} + \frac{c_d}{\varepsilon^{\alpha}} |u|_{B_r}^{(0)},$$
 (E.13)

where c_d is a positive constant that depends only on the dimension d. Moreover, if $u \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{B}_r)$, then we further have

$$[u]_{B_r}^{(1)} \leqslant \varepsilon^{(1+\alpha)} [u]_{B_r}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{c_d}{\varepsilon} |u|_{B_r}^{(0)}, \tag{E.14}$$

$$[u]_{B_r}^{(2)} \leqslant \varepsilon^{\alpha} [u]_{B_r}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{c_d}{\varepsilon^2} |u|_{B_r}^{(0)}. \tag{E.15}$$

Proof. Consider a ball $B_r \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ with radius r and let $x \in B_r$. Let us choose a point in B_r , say x_0 , such that $x \in B_{\varepsilon/2}(x_0) \subset B_r$. Over $B_{\varepsilon/2}(x_0)$, we integrate $\partial_{x_i} u$ and apply Green's formula to obtain

$$\int_{B_{\varepsilon/2}(x_0)} \partial_{x_i} u \, dx = \int_{\partial B_{\varepsilon/2}(x_0)} u \cos(\nu_{\partial B_{\varepsilon/2}}, x_i) \, ds, \tag{E.16}$$

where $\nu_{\partial B_{\varepsilon/2}}$ is the outward unit normal vector to the boundary $\partial B_{\varepsilon/2}$. Because $u \in C^{1+\alpha}(\overline{B}_r)$, then the Mean Value Theorem can be applied and it tells us that there is a point $\bar{x} \in B_{\varepsilon/2}$ such that

$$\partial_{x_i} u(\bar{x}) = \frac{1}{|B_{\varepsilon/2}|} \int_{B_{\varepsilon/2}(x_0)} \partial_{x_i} u \, dx,$$

from which, together with (E.16), we can obtain the estimate (cf. [42], Eq. (2.1), p. 22)

$$|\partial_{x_i} u(\bar{x})| = \frac{1}{\left|B_{\varepsilon/2}\right|} \left| \int_{B_{\varepsilon/2}(x_0)} \partial_{x_i} u \, dx \right| \leqslant \frac{\left|\partial B_{\varepsilon/2}\right|}{\left|B_{\varepsilon/2}\right|} \leqslant \frac{\frac{2\pi^{d/2}}{\Gamma_f(d/2)} \left(\frac{\varepsilon}{2}\right)^{d-1}}{\frac{\pi^{d/2}}{\Gamma_f(d/2+1)} \left(\frac{\varepsilon}{2}\right)^d} \left|u\right|_{B_r}^{(0)} = \frac{2d}{\varepsilon} \left|u\right|_{B_r}^{(0)},$$

where Γ_f denotes the gamma-function. For $\bar{x} \neq x$, we can then make the following estimation of $|\partial_{x_i} u(x)|$:

$$\begin{aligned} |\partial_{x_i} u(x)| &\leq |\partial_{x_i} u(x) - \partial_{x_i} u(\bar{x})| + |\partial_{x_i} u(\bar{x})| \leq \frac{|\partial_{x_i} u(x) - \partial_{x_i} u(\bar{x})|}{|x - \bar{x}|^{\alpha}} |x - \bar{x}|^{\alpha} + \frac{2d}{\varepsilon} |u|_{B_r}^{(0)} \\ &\leq \varepsilon^{\alpha} [\partial_{x_i} u]_{B_r}^{(\alpha)} + \frac{2d}{\varepsilon} |u|_{B_r}^{(0)}. \end{aligned}$$

This verifies estimate (E.12).

Next, we validate (E.13) using (E.12). For any $x, \hat{x} \in \overline{B}_r, x \neq \hat{x}$, we have either $|x - \hat{x}| < \varepsilon$ or $|x - \hat{x}| \geqslant \varepsilon$ which would give us the inequalities

$$\frac{\left|u(x)-u(\hat{x})\right|}{\left|x-\hat{x}\right|^{\alpha}}=\left|x-\hat{x}\right|^{1-\alpha}\frac{\left|u(x)-u(\hat{x})\right|}{\left|x-\hat{x}\right|}<\varepsilon^{1-\alpha}\left|u\right|_{B_{r}}^{(1)},$$

and

$$\frac{|u(x)-u(\hat{x})|}{|x-\hat{x}|^{\alpha}}\leqslant \frac{1}{\varepsilon^{\alpha}}\left(\max_{x\in\Omega}|u(x)|+\max_{\hat{x}\in\Omega}|u(\hat{x})|\right)=\frac{2}{\varepsilon^{\alpha}}\left|u|_{B_{r}}^{(0)},\right.$$

respectively. In either case, we get the estimate

$$\frac{|u(x)-u(\hat{x})|}{|x-\hat{x}|^{\alpha}}\leqslant \varepsilon^{1-\alpha}\,|u|_{B_r}^{(1)}+\frac{2}{\varepsilon^{\alpha}}\,|u|_{B_r}^{(0)}\,.$$

Combining the above estimate with (E.12), we obtain (E.13).

We next prove (E.14) and (E.15) using (E.12) and (E.13), respectively. To this end, let us assume that $u \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{B}_r)$. Then, (E.13) implies that

$$[u]_{B_r}^{(1+\alpha)} \le \varepsilon_1 [u]_{B_r}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{c_d}{\varepsilon_1^{\alpha}} |u|_{B_r}^{(1)},$$
 (E.17)

for any $\varepsilon_1 \in (0, r]$. Let us denote $\varepsilon = \varepsilon_2$ in (E.12) and use the resulting inequality to estimate the quantity $|u|_{B_r}^{(1)}$ in (E.17). These lead us to

$$\left(1 - c_d \left(\frac{\varepsilon_2}{\varepsilon_1}\right)^{\alpha}\right) [u]_{B_r}^{(1+\alpha)} \leqslant \varepsilon_1 [u]_{B_r}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{c_d^2}{\varepsilon_1^{\alpha} \varepsilon_2} |u|_{B_r}^{(1)}.$$
(E.18)

To force a single parameter $\varepsilon \in (0, r]$ in the above inequality, we apply a scaling technique. To this end, we introduce the scaling $\varepsilon_1 = t_1 \varepsilon$ and $\varepsilon_2 = t_2 \varepsilon$, where $t_1, t_2 \in (0, 1)$ and substitute these quantities to (E.18) to obtain

$$\frac{1}{t_1} \left(1 - c_d \left(\frac{t_2}{t_1} \right)^{\alpha} \right) [u]_{B_r}^{(1+\alpha)} \leqslant \varepsilon [u]_{B_r}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{c_d^2}{t_1^{1+\alpha} t_2 \varepsilon^{1+\alpha}} |u|_{B_r}^{(0)}.$$
 (E.19)

Now, we only need to choose the values of t_1 and t_2 such that $t_1^{-1} \left(1 - c_d \left(t_2 t_1^{-1}\right)^{\alpha}\right) = 1$ and denote by $\tilde{c}_d := c_d^2 (t_1^{1+\alpha} t_2)^{-1} > 0$ to obtain

$$\varepsilon^{\alpha}[u]_{B_r}^{(1+\alpha)} \leqslant \varepsilon^{1+\alpha}[u]_{B_r}^{(2+\alpha)} + \tilde{c}_d |u|_{B_r}^{(0)}.$$

Using the above estimate for the quantity $\varepsilon^{\alpha}[u]_{B_r}^{(1+\alpha)}$ in (E.12), and after some change of notations, we finally get (E.14). Of course, the inequality holds for any $\varepsilon \in (0, r]$ since we choose $t_1, t_2 \in (0, 1)$.

We apply the same technique to prove (E.15) using (E.12) and (E.14). That is, using (E.12) with $u \in C^{2+\alpha}(\overline{B}_r)$, and then applying (E.14) to estimate $\varepsilon |u|_{B_r}^{(1)}$, we obtain

$$\varepsilon^{2}[u]_{B_{r}}^{(2)} \leqslant \varepsilon^{2+\alpha}[u]_{B_{r}}^{(2+\alpha)} + c_{d}\varepsilon \left| u \right|_{B_{r}}^{(1)} \leqslant (1+c_{d})\varepsilon^{2+\alpha}[u]_{B_{r}}^{(2+\alpha)} + c_{d}^{2} \left| u \right|_{B_{r}}^{(0)}.$$

Again, to force the constant, which is dependent only on the dimension d, to appear only as a coefficient of $|u|_{B_r}^{(0)}$, we consider the scaled free parameter $t\tilde{\varepsilon} = \varepsilon \in (0, r]$, where $t \in (0, 1)$, to obtain

$$\tilde{\varepsilon}^{2}[u]_{B_{r}}^{(2)} \leq (1+c_{d})t^{\alpha}\tilde{\varepsilon}^{2+\alpha}[u]_{B_{r}}^{(2+\alpha)} + \left(\frac{c_{d}}{t}\right)^{2}|u|_{B_{r}}^{(0)}.$$

We choose $t \in (0,1)$ such that $(1+c_d)t^{\alpha}=1$ and let $\tilde{c}_d:=(c_dt^{-1})^2$ in order to finally get

$$[u]_{B_r}^{(2)} \leqslant \tilde{\varepsilon}^{\alpha} [u]_{B_r}^{(2+\alpha)} + \frac{\tilde{c}_d}{\tilde{\varepsilon}^2} |u|_{B_r}^{(0)},$$

which holds for all $\tilde{\varepsilon} \in (0, r]$. This verifies the last estimate (E.15), completing the proof of the lemma.